The deep ocean density structure at the Last Glacial Maximum: What was it and why?

Thesis by

Madeline Diane Miller

In Partial Fulfillment of the Requirements

for the Degree of

Doctor of Philosophy

California Institute of Technology

Pasadena, California

2014

(Defended September 27, 2013)

into the sea all the rivers go, and yet the sea is never filled, and still to their goal the rivers go

–Ecclesiastes, The Jerusalem Bible Translation

Acknowledgements

The work described in this thesis would not have been possible without my advisor, Jess Adkins. He provided the impetus, and the structural and intellectual support for my projects. Further, Jess has encouraged me to explore bold research paths and, when setbacks inevitably arose, he helped me learn from them, in the process nudging me towards becoming an independent researcher. Jess models and teaches a broad, problem-based approach to research. While many oceanographers incorporate data or concepts outside their traditional focus (i.e. biological, physical, or chemical) to their work, Jess does not cross disciplinary boundaries, he simply does not see them. He teaches us both by telling us directly and, even more impressively, by his example that we should always use the best tool to answer our questions, whether the tool is something we already know or is well outside our "tool box". I look forward to continuing to learn from Jess in the future.

I am indebted to Nadia Lapusta for her support as the Mechanical Engineering option representative in smoothing the way for me to pursue an unconventional thesis topic. My thesis committee – John Brady, Chris Charles, Richard Murray, and Mark Simons – have been equally open-minded in assisting with work outside their primary areas of interest and very generous with their time.

Thanks go to Dimitris Menemenlis for his open-ended support, encouragement and advising in ocean and ice modeling, supercomputing, and all things related to MITgcm. Dimitris welcomed me into his research group at JPL, vastly increasing the number of oceanographers with whom I've been able to interact over the course of my PhD. My work has particularly benefited from input from Daria Halkides, Jessica Hausman, An Nguyen, Michael Schodlok and Gunnar Spreen.

Over the last two years, Mark Simons has been slowly and stealthily saddled with the role of being my unofficial second advisor. Mark's expertise and guidance were essential to the work in this thesis that relies on inverse methods, and he has shared liberally his time, ideas, code, server, and scientific contacts. I continue to be impressed by Mark's tireless enthusiasm for science and his ability to see the construction hidden behind every research roadblock, best encapsulated by his own words: "...but look how much you've *learned*!"

Sarah Minson has not only generously allowed me to use her code, CATMIP, but has also provided significant technical support in applying CATMIP to my research problems, despite the fact they do not overlap with hers. Sarah has additionally shared with me a great deal of her time and expertise on Bayesian MCMC parameter estimation.

Through Mark's and Sarah's introductions, my work has been improved from conversations with Francisco Ortega, Bryan Riel, Michael Aivazis and Jim Beck.

I have been lucky to share many hours in the last few years with the vibrant people in my research group: Anna Beck, Andrea Burke, Stacy Carolin, Alex Gagnon, Sophie Hines, Paige Logan, Nele Meckler, Guillaume Paris, Ted Present, James Rae, Morgan Raven, Alex Rider, Harald Sodemann, Adam Subhas, and Nithya Thiagarajan. I have learned many things from all of you, not the least of which is how to keep the fun in good science.

The pore fluid sampling intercomparison was made possible in large part by the Integrated Ocean Drilling Program (IODP), the Consortium for Ocean Leadership, and collaboration with David Hodell. The success of our ship-based work was certainly due to David's extensive previous experience on IODP expeditions and his geochemical expertise. The technicians in the chemistry lab on IODP Expedition 339, Chris Bennight and Erik Moortgat, were unendingly patient and extremely meticulous in helping us complete our work. My organic geochemist counterpart Alexandrina Tzanova was an excellent teammate and the source of much comic relief on our shift. Chief scientists Javier Hernández Molina and Dorrik Stow generously granted David's and my extensive sample request. Much of my post-cruise work was supported by a Consortium for Ocean Leadership Post Expedition Award.

The NASA Advanced Supercomputer (NAS) support and Caltech's GPS IT and High Performance Computing (HPC) support, particularly Mike Black and Naveed Near-Ansari, have been extremely responsive and patient in assisting me debug issues on Pleiades, Salacia and Fram over the course of my research. I am particularly grateful that experts in the NAS Control Room are available 24x7.

At various stages in building experiments at Caltech, some of which are not discussed in this thesis, I have benefited greatly from the help of all of the machinists in the Physics shop, as well as Caltech's scientific glassblower Rick Gerhart.

Finally, I would like to thank my family and friends for their love, support, and on-demand cheering. In particular, Chuck Booten, John Eaton, Milt Edgerton, Pat Edgerton, Zach Lebo, Christina Liebner, Diane Miller, Ethan Miller, Sara Davis Miller, Steph Miller, Zach Miller, Luigi Perotti, and Phyllis Wolf have cheered extra-loudly for me throughout my time here at Caltech. E al sior tenente, con cui ho condiviso questa marcia, vorrei dire che ghe sem.

Abstract

The search for reliable proxies of past deep ocean temperature and salinity has proved difficult, thereby limiting our ability to understand the coupling of ocean circulation and climate over glacial-interglacial timescales. Previous inferences of deep ocean temperature and salinity from sediment pore fluid oxygen isotopes and chlorinity indicate that the deep ocean density structure at the Last Glacial Maximum (LGM, ∼20,000 years BP) was set by salinity, and that the density contrast between northern and southern sourced deep waters was markedly greater than in the modern ocean. High density stratification could help explain the marked contrast in carbon isotope distribution recorded in the LGM ocean relative to that we observe today, but what made the ocean's density structure so different at the LGM? How did it evolve from one state to another? Further, given the sparsity of the LGM temperature and salinity data set, what else can we learn by increasing the spatial density of proxy records?

We investigate the cause and feasibility of a highly and salinity stratified deep ocean at the LGM and we work to increase the amount of information we can glean about the past ocean from pore fluid profiles of oxygen isotopes and chloride. Using a coupled ocean–sea ice–ice shelf cavity model we test whether the deep ocean density structure at the LGM can be explained by ice–ocean interactions over the Antarctic continental shelves, and show that a large contribution of the LGM salinity stratification can be explained through lower ocean temperature. In order to extract the maximum information from pore fluid profiles of oxygen isotopes and chloride we evaluate several inverse methods for ill-posed problems and their ability to recover bottom water histories from sediment pore fluid profiles. We demonstrate that Bayesian Markov Chain Monte Carlo parameter estimation techniques enable us to robustly recover the full solution space of bottom

water histories, not only at the LGM, but through the most recent deglaciation and the Holocene up to the present. Finally, we evaluate a non-destructive pore fluid sampling technique, Rhizon samplers, in comparison to traditional squeezing methods and show that despite their promise, Rhizons are unlikely to be a good sampling tool for pore fluid measurements of oxygen isotopes and chloride.

Contents

List of Figures

List of Tables

Chapter 1

Introduction

Over the last ∼0.8 Ma (Ma = one million years), the Earth has experienced glacial cycles with a dominant ∼100 ka (ka = one thousand years) period (Ruddiman et al., 1989, Lisiecki and Raymo, 2007). At the glacial maxima, ice sheets blanketed extensive swaths of the northern hemisphere continents (CLIMAP Project Members, 1976), and the mean annual atmospheric temperature dropped globally relative to temperatures during interglacials (glacial minima), with values of -2°C over the tropics to -30°C over the Northern Hemisphere continental ice sheets (Braconnot et al., 2007). While solar energy received by the Earth due to changes in the Earth's orbit around the sun has major variability on periods of 23 ka, 41 ka and 100 ka, spectral analysis of temperature records in ocean sediments and ice cores over the last 0.8 million years shows that the magnitude of the 100 ka year climate variability is disproportionate to the changes in solar input on the same timescale. As compared to the solar forcing and climate response at 23 ka and 41 ka periods, the 100 ka climate cycle appears to be nonlinear with respect to solar variability. Thus, it is commonly believed that one or more process internal to the Earth's climate system must explain the recent dominance of the 100 ka glacial cycle (Hays et al., 1976, Imbrie et al., 1992, 1993).

The CO_2 concentration in the atmosphere, as recorded over the past 0.8 Ma in ice core bubbles, has mirrored atmospheric temperature changes. From glacial maxima to glacial minima, CO_2 increased by 80-100 ppmv (Petit et al., 1999). As a greenhouse gas CO_2 can amplify temperature changes, which may contribute to the nonlinearity of the 100

ka atmospheric temperature cycle (Jouzel et al., 2007). While we are interested in longer timescales, we have a relative richness of data spanning the most recent deglaciation, a period of warming and ice sheet collapse following the Last Glacial Maximum (LGM, roughly 26-19 ka BP). The $\Delta^{14}C$ of atmospheric CO_2, a measure of the amount of radiocarbon (^{14}C) in the atmosphere, steadily declined over the last deglaciation as the atmospheric concentration of CO_2 increased. Somehow, the CO_2 simultaneously increased in concentration and became older. Further, during a period known as the "Mystery Interval", there was a sharp jump in CO_2 concomitant with a drop in $\Delta^{14}C$ from 17.5 ka to 14.5 ka (Beck et al., 2001, Hughen et al., 2000, 2004, Fairbanks et al., 2005, Broecker and Barker, 2007). While part of the decrease in $\Delta^{14}C$ may have been due to a decline in the rate of atmospheric production of ^{14}C over the last 40,000 years (Laj et al., 2002, Frank et al., 1997), other evidence shows that the production of ^{14}C remained steady over the deglaciation (Muscheler et al., 2004). Whether or not atmospheric radiocarbon production changed over the last 40 ka, the declines implied are not large enough to explain the full atmospheric signal in atmospheric $\Delta^{14}C$ relative to atmospheric CO_2 (Broecker and Barker, 2007). Instead, it seems increasingly likely that a long-isolated, and thus radiocarbon-depleted, reservoir of CO_2 was released to the atmosphere during the deglaciation through steady degassing punctuated by one or two (Marchitto et al., 2007) burps. The most likely candidate for the source of the depleted radiocarbon is the ocean, given its large capacity for storing carbon ($\sim$39,000 Pg vs. 2,700 Pg in the atmosphere and terrestrial reservoirs combined (Sigman and Boyle, 2000)) and sluggish circulation (Broecker and Denton, 1989). Moderate changes in the oceanic $\Delta^{14}C$ and CO_2 budget can lead to large changes in the atmosphere's $\Delta^{14}C$, due to the relative size difference between the ocean and atmosphere carbon reservoirs(Burke and Robinson, 2012). As the atmospheric CO_2 and temperature records are synced, it seems likely that whatever altered carbon exchange between the ocean and atmosphere also affected the ocean–atmosphere heat exchange.

There are a variety of hypotheses for how the ocean is able to modulate atmospheric CO_2 and temperature. The leading ideas suggest that past glacial cycles were caused by a combination of changes in biological productivity or efficiency and physical reorganization of oceanic circulation (Knox and McElroy, 1984, Sarmiento and Toggweiler, 1984,

Siegenthaler and Wenk, 1984, Sigman and Boyle, 2000, Sigman et al., 2010). The paleoceanographic evidence strongly favors a combination rather than a single mechanism (Adkins, 2013).

Due to their strong regional signatures in the surface ocean, chemical properties are our best tracers of ocean overturning, the rates and pathways by which the deep ocean is ventilated. In areas of high planktonic photosynthesis in the surface ocean, the water is heavy in δ^{13}C, that is, it has a high proportion of the carbon isotope ^{13}C relative to the most abundant carbon isotope ^{12}C. Due to its productivity, the subtropical North Atlantic has heavy δ^{13}C which is distinct from the light δ^{13}C in the Southern Ocean. As today deep waters primarily sink from either the North Atlantic or Southern Ocean, and their individual source signatures are distinct in δ^{13}C, we can distinguish the origin of deep water and the amount it has mixed through its δ^{13}C value (Kroopnick, 1985). A similar argument holds for the phosphate and cadmium concentrations in water; cadmium is highly correlated with oceanic phosphate concentrations (Marchitto and Broecker, 2006, Elderfield and Rickaby, 2000, Boyle, 1988), an essential nutrient for photosynthesis, and both cadmium and phosphate concentrations antivary with water δ^{13}C. Cadmium concentration is an independent marker of a source water mass that contains the same information as δ^{13}C (Boyle, 1992).

One complication in using δ^{13}C and cadmium as water mass tracers is that remineralization at depth makes the water light in δ^{13}C and returns the phosphate and cadmium to the water column. After water sinks from the surface to the deep ocean, it becomes increasingly lighter in δ^{13}C and its cadmium concentration increases until it resurfaces. Thus, δ^{13}C and cadmium indicate both the surface origin of the water mass and the time since the water left the surface. Despite these complications, these nutrient-like tracers can constrain the mixing between northern and southern source water masses because both the surface signatures and ages of North Atlantic and Southern Ocean waters are so strikingly different.

δ^{13}C of calcium carbonate ($CaCO_3$) in ocean-dwelling foraminifera shells records the δ^{13}C of the water in which they grow. The circulation patterns traced in the water are mirrored in the δ^{13}C recorded in modern foraminifera shells. Similarly, the Cd/Ca ratio recorded

in foraminifera shells mirrors the water cadmium content except in water undersaturated in carbonate ion or in regions of very high productivity (Marchitto and Broecker, 2006, Elderfield and Rickaby, 2000, Boyle, 1992).

Measurements of δ^{13}C in glacial-age foraminifera fossils show an increase in surface and intermediate waters (down to ∼2000 meters) and a decrease in deep waters relative to modern values. This pattern is consistent in the Atlantic (Curry and Oppo, 2005, Duplessy et al., 1988), Southern Ocean (Charles and Fairbanks, 1992, Ninnemann and Charles, 2002), and Pacific (Matsumoto et al., 2002) basins. The higher vertical gradient in δ^{13}C has been interpreted variously as a slowing of oceanic overturning, a shift in surface source water masses, or a biologically induced redistribution of the surface signatures of δ^{13}C and Cd/Ca without any change in circulation. Our information from glacial δ^{13}C and Cd/Ca can support either a biological or physical difference in the glacial ocean carbon cycle relative to today's.

While reconstructions of nutrient-like data such as δ^{13}C and cadmium (phosphate) concentrations are suggestive of a slower past deep ocean ventilation rate, several inversions using paleoceanographic proxies of these quantities have been unable to rule out that the circulation at the LGM was the same as it is today, or even two times faster (LeGrand and Wunsch, 1995, Huybers et al., 2007). Huybers et al. (2007) suggested that an order of magnitude increase is needed in both spatial resolution and measurement precision in order to have enough information to reject an LGM circulation that is two times different than today's. Circulation in these particular inverse studies is defined as the three-dimensional geostrophic velocities on somewhat arbitrary grids. An inversion of the LGM ocean circulation using a slightly different gridding approach than in either LeGrand and Wunsch (1995) or Huybers et al. (2007) found instead that the LGM circulation *is* distinguishable from modern circulation using available paleoceanographic data (Marchal and Curry, 2008). The assumptions made in (Marchal and Curry, 2008) vs. those in (Huybers et al., 2007) are very subtly different, suggesting that the ability to distinguish between modern and LGM ocean circulation using nutrient proxies depends quite strongly on prior assumptions in the inverse approach.

Reconstructions of nutrient-like tracers such as δ^{13}C and Cd/Ca alone cannot constrain

ocean circulation (without other assumptions), as their values are also a function of biological productivity, biological efficiency, time, ocean redox state and carbonate saturation, which are themselves functions of each other. While radioisotope data is promising as an independent "clock" or measurement of rates, we still have many uncertainties about radioisotope initial values at any point in time or space, limiting their utility.

In modern oceanography, water mass sources and pathways can be tracked in large part through temperature and salinity, which are almost perfectly conservative tracers in the ocean interior. Additionally, large-scale ocean circulation is balanced by horizontal density gradients (assuming geostrophic and hydrostatic balance). The density of ocean water is set by temperature and salinity, thus temperature and salinity give us both conservative tracers of pathways and estimates of velocities.

It is clear that knowledge of the past ocean's temperature and salinity fields would vastly improve our ability to distinguish between hypothetical past circulations. Short of that, a proxy for water density could be used to estimate large-scale flows, although the picture of circulation we can draw from temperature and salinity is more complete than that from density alone.

Paleodensity proxies

δ^{18}O (a normalized ratio of ^{18}O relative to ^{16}O) of foraminifera shells records the temperature and δ^{18}O of the water in which the foraminifera grew. Today there is a strong correlation between δ^{18}O of water and the salinity of water, as the same processes that change the δ^{18}O likewise change the salinity (evaporation, precipitation, ice-ocean interactions). Locally there is often a simple (linear) relationship between water density and the δ^{18}O of the foraminifera growing in that water. Thus, if one assumes that the δ^{18}O–salinity relationship is constant in time one can locally reconstruct the geostrophic flow (Lynch-Stieglitz et al., 1999a,b, Lynch-Stieglitz, 2001, Hirschi and Lynch-Stieglitz, 2006, Lynch-Stieglitz et al., 2006). The main drawback to this technique is that the density–δ^{18}O relationship varies quite strongly spatially in the ocean and there is no guarantee that this relationship is constant in time under changing circulation and ice melting conditions (Lynch-Stieglitz et al., 2008).

In lieu of a paleodensity proxy, we need to combine both paleotemperature (paleothermometer) and paleosalinity proxies to reconstruct the past ocean density structure.

Paleotemperature proxies

Several reliable proxies for past surface ocean temperature exist, including alkenone saturation ratios, and planktonic foraminifera species assemblages (see for example de Vernal et al. (2006)). These proxies record the temperature of the upper few meters of the ocean, but an understanding of how the ocean density gradients changed in the past will require proxies for intermediate and deep ocean temperature. A variety of paleothermometers have been proposed, but we still lack a robust technique to reconstruct past sub-surface ocean temperature.

The δ^{18}O recorded in the calcium carbonate shells of foraminifera, $\delta^{18}O_c$ is a function of temperature, but also of the δ^{18}O of water, $\delta^{18}O_w$, which can vary due to changes in ice–ocean interactions, evaporation, precipitation and mixing. $\delta^{18}O_w$ varies substantially in space, making $\delta^{18}O_c$ a poor proxy for deep ocean temperature.

The elemental ratio Mg/Ca in foraminiferal shells is sensitive to temperature. However, the relationship between Mg/Ca uptake and temperature is itself sensitive to carbonate ion ($[CO_3^{2-}]$) saturation state and temperature. In carbonate undersaturated water and/or cold water (below $\sim 3°C$), that is, deep ocean conditions, Mg/Ca is not reliable as a temperature proxy without knowledge of the carbonate saturation state (Elderfield et al., 2006, Rosenthal et al., 2006, Yu and Elderfield, 2008). The proper use of Mg/Ca to reconstruct past deep ocean temperature requires another proxy for carbonate saturation state, which has not yet been developed. Even when the $[CO_3^{2-}]$ is or is assumed well-known, the reported error for temperature in best case scenarios is $\pm 0.5 - 1.0°C$ Elderfield et al. (2012, see e.g.), which is quite large relative to the typical range of deep ocean temperatures of $\sim 5°C$.

The extent of clumping of the heavy isotopes of carbon and oxygen (^{13}C and ^{18}O) in carbonate shells records the temperature of formation of the shell, which in an oceanic setting, is the temperature of the water in which the animal grew (Ghosh et al., 2006, Eiler, 2011). Measurement of isotope clumping in ocean dwelling carbonate shell building

animals is a robust paleothermometer, in that it records only temperature. One major limitation of clumped isotope paleothermometry is that inter-laboratory calibrations as yet have not achieved any better than ±2°C offsets in their measurements of the same standard, restricting the accuracy of any absolute temperature measurement. Clumped isotope measurements also require large quantities of samples to achieve high precision results (Eiler, 2011). For this reason they have been most successfully used for ocean temperature reconstructions on deep sea corals (Thiagarajan et al., 2011), massive relative to foraminifera. Unfortunately deep sea corals are not ubiquitous either spatially or in time, due to their sensitivity to environmental parameters such as aragonite saturation state and oxygen saturation of the water. Deep sea corals appear quite sparse or entirely absent below 2600m (Thiagarajan et al., 2013). Foraminifera measurements have been made successfully on sets of hundreds of foraminifera, but it can often be difficult to find this many foraminifera in a sediment sample and impractical to use them all for a single temperature reconstruction. New advances in techniques may allow us to make measurements on smaller samples, such as 10-20 individuals, but for now clumped isotope thermometry can only identify large temperature signals (Grauel et al., 2013). In the deep ocean the temperature change over glaciations and deglaciations probably was less than 4°C, making the clumped isotope thermometry technique difficult to apply to understanding our recent climate history.

With an independent estimate of the water $\delta^{18}O$ in the past, we could reconstruct temperature from $\delta^{18}O_c$ in foraminifera. By combining measurements of sediment pore fluid $\delta^{18}O$ with a numerical model of advection and diffusion in sediments, McDuff (1985), Schrag and DePaolo (1993), Schrag et al. (1996), Paul et al. (2001), Adkins et al. (2002), Schrag et al. (2002) and Malone et al. (2004) found $\delta^{18}O_w$ histories that, input to their model, produced output that fit the measured data, allowing them to estimate the LGM $\delta^{18}O_w$ and temperatures at those sites. The advantages of this technique are that it is not sensitive to ocean chemistry or pressure and though the time resolution is limited, the absolute error may be smaller than that of other paleotemperature proxies. However, this technique's major limitation is that finding the history of bottom water $\delta^{18}O$ from present-day pore fluid measurements is an inverse problem with a non-unique solution. As yet, a robust approach to this modeling has not been established. Due to the ability of

isotopes to diffuse in the sediments, the time resolution of the technique is guaranteed to be lower than that of clumped isotope or paired Mg/Ca and $\delta^{18}O_c$ measurements, which are sealed upon shell formation. So far only one time point in the past has been estimated, the LGM. As part of this thesis, we search for a robust approach to extracting deep ocean $\delta^{18}O_w$ histories using pore fluid measurements.

Paleosalinity proxies

Past deep ocean salinity is notoriously difficult to reconstruct, in part because the modern range of deep ocean salinities is quite narrow. The wide range of surface ocean salinities and temperatures allow us to examine the sensitivity of surface-dwelling foraminifera, coccolithophores, dinoflagellate cysts and diatoms to their environments and use our understanding of this environmental sensitivity to read the sedimentary records. In contrast, over the very narrow range of deep ocean salinities and temperatures it is difficult to identify the sensitivity of benthic foraminiferal species to their environments, and the deep ocean salinity range is particularly small. Surface salinity can be reasonably well reconstructed through dinoflagellate cyst species assemblages (de Vernal et al., 2005), but there is no generally applicable salinity paleo proxy for depths below 5-10m.

To date, the only measurement that claims to definitively identify past ocean salinity is reconstructions from present-day sediment pore fluid profiles. In a method analogous to that for the $\delta^{18}O_w$ problem, McDuff (1985) and Adkins et al. (2002) reconstructed the LGM salinity using pore fluid measurements of $[Cl^-]$ as a conservative measure of salinity.

Published results from pore fluid reconstructions of LGM temperature and salinity suggest that at the Last Glacial Maximum (LGM), the salinity contrast between northern source deep water and southern source bottom water was reversed with respect to the contrast today. Further, the density gradient between deep waters was larger than that of the modern (Adkins et al., 2002), the only true mechanistic support for the hypothesis that the deep ocean's reservoir of carbon was physically isolated in the past. In addition to temperature, salinity, density and circulation pathways, pore fluid reconstructions have the potential to yield information about spatial variability in mass wasting of glaciers through the changing values of $\delta^{18}O_w$ in time and space.

Despite their promise, and the lack of other reliable techniques, sediment pore fluid reconstructions of past ocean $\delta^{18}O_w$ and salinity have not caught on in the paleoceanographic community. This is in part because the information-to-sample ratio so far has been quite low. The recommended amount of sediment to do one LGM reconstruction is at minimum one hundred 5-cm samples, that is, 5 m of sediment core. In contrast, a single time point reconstruction of any other climate variable can require as little as 1-3 mm of core, and usually multiple measurements can be performed on the same section. Squeezing pore fluids from a sample destroys the sample for other purposes (F. Sierro, personal communication), and thus LGM pore fluid reconstructions are a very inefficient use of precious sediment.

The other likely reason that more researchers have not enthusiastically adopted the pore fluid proxy technique is that the reconstruction of the LGM values is *ad hoc*; there is no consistent and robustly demonstrated method to invert for bottom water histories from pore fluid profiles. Instead, each publication has relied on similar but different approaches, requiring the need to every time re-demonstrate the insensitivity of their results to changes in their parameters. The lack of a consistent and proven method makes the entry cost to working with pore fluids as a proxy for deep ocean salinity and $\delta^{18}O$ quite high.

Are pore fluids a reliable proxy for past ocean $\delta^{18}O$, temperature, and salinity? If so, can we use them to reconstruct the deglacial evolution of the ocean rather than just the LGM values, making more efficient use of the sediment? Alternatively, or additionally, is there a way to dramatically increase the number of measurements we make with pore fluids without sacrificing other climate records? Finally, given our knowledge of the modern ocean, is there a way to explain how the ocean density stratification was dominated by salinity at the LGM?

This thesis attempts to remove the barriers to the use of pore fluid proxy for $\delta^{18}O$, temperature and salinity. Our main goal is to robustly determine the information content of pore fluid profiles, that is, what they can tell us about the past ocean and what they can not. As part of this work, we examined the oceanic feasibility of the temperature and salinity distribution from Adkins et al. (2002)'s pore fluid LGM temperature and salinity reconstruction. Simultaneously we sought to advance the feasibility and reliability of

collecting and measuring sediment pore fluid $\delta^{18}O$ and $[Cl^-]$ in order to encourage wider participation and global dataset size.

In Chapter 2 we examine the ability of traditional regularized least squares inverse methods to recover information about past ocean $\delta^{18}O$ and salinity from sediment pore fluid profiles. With synthetic examples, we show that regularization destroys the resolution of the inverse solution. Further, we demonstrate that the underlying approach in regularized inversions places constraints on the inverse problem's solution that do not mesh with our *a priori* information. This work was done in collaboration with Jess Adkins and Mark Simons.

Chapter 3 places the pore fluid inverse problem in a fully nonlinear Bayesian framework. We apply a Bayesian Markov Chain Monte Carlo parameter estimation technique to estimate the robustness of present-day pore fluid profiles as a proxy for LGM $\delta^{18}O$ and salinity and consider whether these profiles can be used to reconstruct the full deglacial evolution of $\delta^{18}O$, temperature and salinity. We show that, in general, $\delta^{18}O$ and salinity in the Holocene can be reliably reconstructed using pore fluid data, but that information about the LGM is more uncertain. This work was done in collaboration with Jess Adkins, Mark Simons, and Sarah Minson.

Chapter 4 addresses the reliability of a new technique for ocean sediment pore fluid sampling. The use of pore fluid $\delta^{18}O$ and $[Cl^-]$ as paleoceanographic proxies has in part been limited by the difficulty of obtaining samples, as their procurement destroys other ocean sediment climate records. We evaluate Rhizon samplers in comparison to the traditional squeezing technique, and show that Rhizon samplers contaminate $[Cl^-]$ and $\delta^{18}O$ in ocean sediment pore fluid samples. This work was done in collaboration with Jess Adkins, David Hodell, and the science party and technical staff on IODP Expedition 339, with major assistance from Christopher Bennight and Erik Moortgat.

Finally, in Chapter 5 we examine the role of ice–ocean processes in a cold ocean on setting the temperature and salinity distribution at the LGM. In this work we ask whether our current knowledge of oceanic processes can explain a higher-than-modern salinity stratification of deep ocean water masses at the LGM. We test whether reduced ice shelf

basal melting due to interaction with a cold ocean could switch the direction of salt stratification between the deep North and South Atlantic. Chapter 5 has previously appeared in the journal *Paleoceanography* and was completed in collaboration with Jess Adkins, Dimitris Menemenlis, and Michael Schodlok.

Chapter 2

Reconstructing δ^{18}O and salinity histories from pore fluid profiles: What can we learn from regularized least squares?

2.1 Introduction

Using constraints from sediment pore fluid profiles of δ^{18}O and chlorinity, Adkins et al. (2002) inferred that there were larger density differences between deep water masses at the Last Glacial Maximum (LGM), due primarily to their salinities. Of the sites considered, they concluded that Glacial Southern Source Bottom Water (GSSBW), deep water originating from the southern hemisphere, was the densest due to its salinity. These results contrast strikingly with the distribution of today's deep ocean water masses whose density differences are set primarily by temperature; modern southern source deep water, Antarctic Bottom Water (AABW), is the densest deep ocean water mass because it is cold, while remaining less saline than overlying water masses.

The greater inferred stratification in deep water density supports the hypothesis that there was a physically isolated reservoir of CO_2 in the deep ocean at the LGM (Broecker and Barker, 2007). In fact, these reconstructed LGM salinities and temperatures from pore fluids are the **only** paleoceanographic evidence for an isolated reservoir that solely record physical, rather than biological or chemical, changes in the ocean. While the

LGM distribution of $\delta^{13}C$, Cd/Ca and $\delta^{18}O$ indicate the possibility of a slower than modern ocean overturning circulation, inverse analyses (Gebbie, 2012, Huybers et al., 2007, LeGrand and Wunsch, 1995) have shown the LGM ocean distributions are also consistent with a modern circulation and differences in surface properties. Knowledge of the past ocean's bottom temperature and salinity field would be a significant contribution to the picture of past ocean circulation, enabling us to untangle physical changes from chemical and biological signals and better explain why tracer fields in the past ocean varied so strikingly from those of today's ocean.

To date, the only data set that claims to unequivocally identify past ocean density gradients is the pore fluid reconstruction of LGM values. However, the data set in Adkins et al. (2002) consists of four spatial points at one time. In order to fully understand the changing ocean circulation over the most recent deglaciation, we need more points in both time and space. We address a method to increase the spatial resolution of LGM density reconstructions in Chapter 4, while here we investigate whether we can increase the past temporal information we can recover from pore fluid profiles.

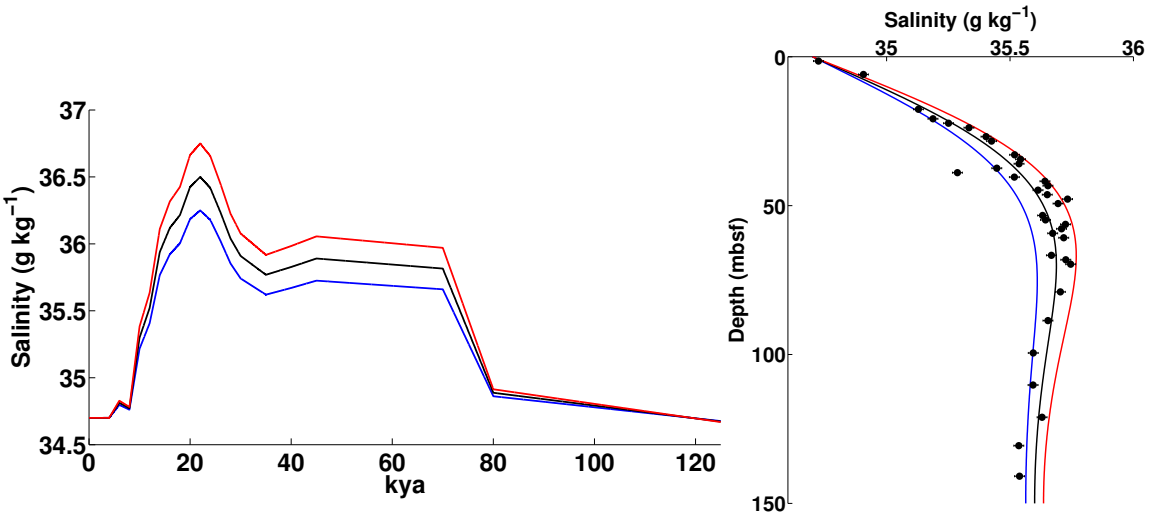
Previous efforts to reconstruct bottom water $\delta^{18}O$ and S from modern pore fluid profiles focused on recovering only one point in the time series, the value at the LGM. The focus on the LGM was because in most paleoceanographic records the LGM can be identified as a large, persistent signal and because modern pore fluid profiles record only a diffusive history of the bottom water time series. In the appropriate sedimentary environment, variability at the sediment-water interface is a strong control on the pore fluid concentrations, but the effects of small magnitude or high frequency forcing on the pore fluid profile are heavily damped.

The method previously used to reconstruct LGM $\delta^{18}O$ and chlorinity in Adkins et al. (2002), Paul et al. (2001), Schrag et al. (1996), Schrag and DePaolo (1993) and McDuff (1985) relied on a number of restrictive assumptions that made it impossible to recover the deglacial histories of $\delta^{18}O$ and $[Cl^-]$. Their essential approaches relied on the supposition that $\delta^{18}O$ and $[Cl^-]$ are both conservative tracers in ocean sediments and determined by one-dimensional advection and diffusion. While there is significant two- or three-dimensional advective fluid flow in many places on the ocean floor associ-

ated with spreading and converging plate boundaries, submarine groundwater discharge from continental aquifers, gas seeps (Judd and Hovland, 2007), and bathymetric pressure perturbations due to current-obstruction interactions (Huettel and Webster, 2001), the evolution of pore fluid concentration profiles in impermeable muddy sediments in abyssal plains is dominated by one-dimensional diffusion (Spinelli et al., 2004, Huettel and Webster, 2001, Boudreau, 1997, Berner, 1980). All of the parameters of the problem were assumed known except for one of the boundary conditions: the bottom water histories of alternatively δ^{18}O or [Cl^-]. It was further assumed that the basic shape of the bottom water histories was known, at least up to a scaling constant; the bottom water histories of δ^{18}O and [Cl^-] primarily reflected changes in sea level, but were able to scale relative to an LGM – modern difference in concentration. Then this scaling parameter was varied in order to find a good fit between the modeled output and the measured data. Figure 2.1 illustrates the application of this technique. Three different sea level histories resulting from three choices for the LGM – modern scaling parameter are shown in Figure 2.1a and the results of using these histories as the sediment-water interface boundary condition are plotted on top of the measured data in Figure 2.1b. The LGM value was determined from the LGM – modern scaling parameter that yielded model output with the best fit to the data.

Underlying this technique is the assumption that, at a given site, changes in total ocean water volume always produce the same local change in properties. Further it requires that all sites co-evolve in the same way for all time. Finally, there must be a linear relationship between a site's concentration and the global mean. In the observational record, these are not assumptions that have been found true. Chaining the bottom water histories at all sites to the mean sea level curve prohibits them from expressing independent deglacial approaches to the modern. Adkins et al. (2002) even note that their best fit models generate systematic misfits between all of the data and model-generated profiles in the upper sediment column, providing compelling evidence that the pore fluid profiles contain information about the deglacial evolutions of temperature and salinity that could not be extracted with their methodology.

Another questionable assumption in previous reconstructions of LGM δ^{18}O and [Cl^-]



(a) (b)

Figure 2.1: Illustration of the method previously used to reconstruct the LGM salinity and δ^{18}O. Changes in salinity scaled to the sea level curve, up to a scaling constant. Low sea level corresponds to high salinity and vice versa. (a) shows boundary conditions produced using three different scaling factors, and (b) shows the model output using those boundary conditions overlaid on measured data in sediment pore fluids (black circles). Each color corresponds to a different LGM – modern scaling factor.

was that the dominant diffusion coefficient at a site could be computed using a scaling approach with the knowledge that the LGM was uniformly at 20 ka BP. The controlling diffusion coefficient, D_0, was calculated as $D_0 = \frac{L^2}{T}$, where T = 20,000 years and L was the depth of the maximum value of δ^{18}O or [Cl^-] in the sediments. Recent studies have shown that the LGM occurred at different times for different glaciers (Clark et al., 2009), which calls into question the idea of a synchronous LGM in the ocean, particularly with the knowledge that the ocean equilibration timescales are long (Wunsch and Heimbach, 2008). Intuition also suggests that the bottom water histories and the diffusion coefficient at each site covary; a higher diffusion coefficient would leave behind a more damped trace of the LGM δ^{18}O and [Cl^-] maximum in the modern measured profiles.

We seek a robust method to reconstruct past ocean bottom temperature and salinity from sediment core interstitial water profiles of δ^{18}O and [Cl^-] in combination with δ^{18}O of benthic foraminifera that will allow us to release the restrictions listed above, particularly the requirement that local bottom water histories can only vary from the global mean by a single, time-invariant, scaling constant. Our main aim is to identify whether we can

recover the deglacial histories of $\delta^{18}O$ and $[Cl^-]$ from modern pore fluid profiles, while at the same time re-evaluate the information about the LGM yielded by the pore fluid profiles.

We have revisited the problem with a variety of inverse methods that allow us to release the previous assumption that bottom water histories scaled to the sea level curve, allowing us to 1) test the robustness of previous reconstructions and 2) examine whether we can extract more information than the LGM value from present-day interstitial water profiles.

The solution to an inverse diffusion problem is not unique, and thus without some assumptions the problem is intractable. In this chapter we frame our problem as a linear inverse problem by assuming we do in fact know the dominant diffusion coefficient at a site and focus primarily on reconstructing the ocean bottom water histories of $\delta^{18}O$ and $[Cl^-]$. In Chapter 3 we release the requirement that the diffusion coefficient is known, and examine how doing so affects our uncertainty in past ocean time series of $\delta^{18}O$ and $[Cl^-]$.

In what follows we evaluate the skill of several regularization methods for linear inversions in recovering bottom water histories from pore fluid profiles. We rely on synthetic examples, in which we choose hypothetical synthetic models of bottom water histories, generate synthetic data by running these through a forward model of advection and diffusion in ocean sediments, and then invert the synthetic data and compare the inverse solution with the known solution. These synthetic examples allow us to explore the nature of our inverse problem as well as the limitations of regularized inversions both in their practical use and in error estimation. Our work in Chapter 2 motivates the more complex inverse approach described in Chapter 3.

2.2 Methods

2.2.1 The forward problem

2.2.1.1 Simplifying assumptions

The movement of chemical species in porous sediments is a well-studied topic. In-depth treatment and analysis of the processes involved and the breadth of modeling assumptions can be found in Berner (1980) and Boudreau (1997). The following outlines the approach we use, which relies primarily on these two works.

We assume that the processes that modify tracer concentrations in interstitial water are one-dimensional, that is, all changes are in the vertical direction and there are no net velocity, concentration or pressure gradients in the (local) horizontal directions. The one-dimensional approximation is expected to be appropriate for locations in the ocean lacking bedforms, with spatially uniform sedimentary deposition and oceanic concentrations and consolidated clays, which, in spite of their physical anisotropy, have isotropic permeability (Spinelli et al., 2004). In practice, the assumption of one-dimensional sediment concentration evolution is rarely tested. We further assume that our concentrations of interest are conservative, that is, they are not modified by *in situ* chemical reactions.

The basic equation describing interstitial concentration (c) as a function of depth (z, positive downwards) and time (t) can then be written:

$$\frac{\partial(\phi c)}{\partial t} = D_0 \frac{\partial}{\partial z}\left(\frac{\phi}{\theta^2}\frac{\partial c}{\partial z}\right) - \frac{\partial(u\phi c)}{\partial z}\,. \tag{2.1}$$

ϕ is known as the sediment porosity, defined as:

$$\phi = \frac{\text{interconnected volume}}{\text{total sediment } + \text{ liquid volume}}\,. \tag{2.2}$$

θ is the sediment tortuosity, which is the resistance of the sediment to interstitial flow due to grain alignment. D_0 is a constant diffusion coefficient, which includes the diffusivity in

water of the chemical species of interest. Diffusion due to biological mixing is lumped into the unknown parameter D_0. In reality chemical diffusivity varies with sediment depth, as it is a function of temperature and ionic strength, but for simplicity in the following examples it is held constant. u is the vertical velocity of the water with respect to the sediment, predominantly due to sediment compaction.

Expanding out Equation 2.1 leads to

$$c\frac{\partial\phi}{\partial t} + \phi\frac{\partial c}{\partial t} = D_0\frac{\partial}{\partial z}\left(\frac{\phi}{\theta^2}\right)\frac{\partial c}{\partial z} + \frac{D_0\phi}{\theta^2}\frac{\partial^2 c}{\partial z^2} - \frac{\partial\left(\phi u c\right)}{\partial z}\,. \tag{2.3}$$

Assuming steady state compaction, $\frac{\partial\phi}{\partial t} = 0$. Steady state compaction requires a constant sedimentation rate, which is generally **not** true on glacial–interglacial timescales (e.g., Raymo, 1997, McManus et al., 1998). Here we ignore time evolution of sedimentation rate and compaction, as their effects on the temporal evolution of pore fluid tracer profiles are negligible as compared to other factors (Adkins and Schrag, 2003)

The last term on the right hand side of Equation 2.3 expands out to

$$\begin{aligned}\frac{\partial\left(\phi u c\right)}{\partial z} &= \phi\frac{\partial(uc)}{\partial z} + uc\frac{\partial\phi}{\partial z}\\ &= \phi c\frac{\partial u}{\partial z} + \phi u\frac{\partial c}{\partial z} + uc\frac{\partial\phi}{\partial z}\,.\end{aligned} \tag{2.4}$$

In a steady, incompressible, flow mass conservation (where the mass flux per unit area at z is $\rho_f\phi u$) allows the first and third terms of Equation 2.4 to cancel, yielding:

$$\frac{\partial\left(\phi u c\right)}{\partial z} = \phi u\frac{\partial c}{\partial z}\,. \tag{2.5}$$

Given these two conditions, Equation 2.3 becomes:

$$\begin{aligned}\phi\frac{\partial c}{\partial t} &= D_0\frac{\partial}{\partial z}\left(\frac{\phi}{\theta^2}\right)\frac{\partial c}{\partial z} + \frac{D_0\phi}{\theta^2}\frac{\partial^2 c}{\partial z^2} - \phi u\frac{\partial c}{\partial z}\\ &= \frac{\partial D^*}{\partial z}\frac{\partial c}{\partial z} + D^*\frac{\partial^2 c}{\partial z^2} - \phi u\frac{\partial c}{\partial z}\\ &= \left(\frac{\partial D^*}{\partial z} - \phi u\right)\frac{\partial c}{\partial z} + D^*\frac{\partial^2 c}{\partial z^2}\,,\end{aligned} \tag{2.6}$$

where $D^* = D_0 \frac{\phi}{\theta^2}$. A common model for θ^2 is $\theta^2 = \phi f$ where f is the non-dimensional formation factor:

$$f = \frac{\text{bulk sediment specific electrical resistivity}}{\text{porewater resistivity}}\,, \tag{2.7}$$

which means $\frac{\partial D^*}{\partial z} = D_0 \frac{\partial}{\partial z}\left(\frac{1}{f}\right)$. θ and f are both unknown, but laboratory measurements suggest that a good approximation for f is ϕ^{-n}, where n averages 1.8 over various sediments (Berner, 1980). More complicated models for tortuosity have been proposed, (e.g. Boudreau and Meysman, 2006), but the differences in their fits to empirical data are very subtle. With this, $\frac{\partial D^*}{\partial z} = n\ \phi^{n-1}\ D_0 \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial z} = 1.8\ \phi^{0.8}\ D_0\ \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial z}$.

Our final equation describing concentration evolution with time and space is

$$\frac{\partial c}{\partial t} = \left(1.8\ \phi^{0.8} D_0 \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial z} - u\right) \frac{\partial c}{\partial z} + \phi^{1.8} D_0 \frac{\partial^2 c}{\partial z^2}\,. \tag{2.8}$$

ϕ and $\frac{\partial \phi}{\partial z}$ are measured quantities. In the simple examples that follow, we use a constant $\phi = 0.8$. D_0 is an unknown parameter, but laboratory measurements suggest that its order should be $10^{-6} - 10^{-5}$ cm^2 s^{-1} for [Cl$^-$] (Li and Gregory, 1974). In the following examples we examine the sensitivity of our solutions to D_0 by solving the linear regularization problems using three different orders of magnitude of D_0 (from 2.9 x 10^{-7} to 2.9 x 10^{-5}.

To determine u as a function of z, we assume that compaction ceases at some depth (this is commonly seen in the profiles of ϕ). At this depth of no compaction, the fluid and solid burial velocities are the same, i.e. $u_z = w_z$. Then $\phi u = \phi_z w_z$, or $u = \frac{\phi_z w_z}{\phi}$. w_z can be determined from an appropriate dating scheme of the sediment core sections.

The solution to Equation 2.8 requires two boundary conditions and an initial condition. We specify a Dirichlet (first-type) boundary condition at the sediment–water interface as the concentration as a function of time. At the bottom boundary we choose a Neumann (derivative) boundary condition to be a fixed first derivative of concentration. The bottom boundary choice represents an interaction with deeper sediments or crust that does not change over our timescales of interest.

2.2.1.2 Finite difference solution technique

We solve (integrate) the forward problem (Equation 2.8) with a quadrature rule method, that is, we approximate the derivatives and the integral locally. As the effect of diffusion greatly outweighs that of advection in our problem (Peclet numbers $< 10^{-3}$), we use an Implicit-Explicit (IMEX) method for a computationally efficient and stable integration. IMEX methods combine an implicit method to integrate the stiff terms of the equation, in our case the diffusion term, with an explicit method to integrate the non-stiff terms (advection). IMEX methods avoid the excessively small time steps necessary to stably explicitly integrate the diffusion term, while also avoiding iteratively inverting the matrix associated with the implicit advective term. The IMEX method we use is a second order Semi-implicit Backward Differentiation Formula (SBDF) as described in Ascher et al. (1995). For the implicit solver, we use the tridiagonal matrix algorithm (TDMA), which is a simplified form of Gaussian elimination appropriate for tridiagonal systems of equations.

By examining the convergence behavior of the forward solution, we choose a time step of Δt = 10 years and discretize depth with Δ z = 50 cm. Over the integration time of 125,000 years and 150 m of sediment these choices lead to a 2-norm error in the solution of $\mathcal{O}(10^{-4})$.

2.2.1.3 Green's function approach

If we fix all the parameters in Equation 2.8 in time except for c(z), our problem is a system of linear partial differential equations. Linearity allows us to use a discrete Green's function approach in examining the solution to a variety of forcing conditions. We can write any discretized linear system of equations generally as $\mathbf{Gm} = \mathbf{d}$, where $\mathbf{G}$ is a matrix of discrete Green's functions, $\mathbf{m}$ is the discretized "model" (in our case the boundary forcing conditions and the initial condition) and $\mathbf{d}$ represents a vector of measured data, the present-day measured concentration profile.

In the following examples we fix the intial and bottom boundary conditions and solve

only for the top boundary condition, the evolution of $\delta^{18}O$ or $[Cl^-]$ at the sediment-water interface on the ocean floor. Thus $\mathbf{m}$ is simply a concentration time series. We construct $\mathbf{G}$ by computing finite difference impulse responses to the set of orthonormal boundary conditions. These impulse responses form the columns of the matrix $\mathbf{G}$. The ith row of $\mathbf{G}$, scaled by the boundary condition model $\mathbf{m}$, generates the ith measured data point in $\mathbf{d}$. Then multiplication of $\mathbf{G}$ by any boundary condition vector (which is a linear combination of unit vectors) yields the present day concentration profile that arises in response to that boundary condition time series.

The dimensions of $\mathbf{G}$ are arbitrary, depending on the choice of discretization. In order to eliminate convergence problems, we compute roughly discretized $\mathbf{G}$ matrices from a converged finite difference solution. The finite difference computation of the columns of $\mathbf{G}$ always uses 10 year time step and 50 cm space step, regardless of the temporal and spatial discretization of $\mathbf{G}$.

Once the forward problem is framed using discrete Green's functions, it is numerically much more efficient to solve; instead of inverting matrices we can use direct matrix multiplication. Additionally, the discrete Green's function approach provides a natural framework for addressing the inverse problem.

2.2.2 The inverse problem

For completeness we summarize the necessary theoretical background to solving discrete ill-posed problems. Unless otherwise noted, the information in sections 2.2.2.1– 2.2.2.5 is from Aster et al. (2005) and Hansen (1998).

2.2.2.1 Ill-posed nature of inverse problem

In practice, we measure the modern concentration profile $c(z)|_{t=mod}$. From this set of observations we wish to infer the past time evolution of water properties at the sediment – water interface, $c_0(t)$. The evolution of the bottom boundary condition $c_L(z)$ is also unknown, as is the initial condition $c(z)|_{t=past}$. Once we have framed the problem using

discrete Green's functions, as described above, the solution to the discretized problem may be written as

$$\mathbf{m} = \mathbf{G}^{-1}\mathbf{d} \tag{2.9}$$

where $\mathbf{m}$ in our case is the bottom water boundary condition.

Due to the particular nature of our problem, the inversion of $\mathbf{G}$ is not straightforward. The continuous problem can be written generally as:

$$\int_a^b G(z,t)m(t)dt = d(z),\ a \leq z \leq b\,, \tag{2.10}$$

where the kernel G is a Green's function that represents the advection-diffusion operation on m(t). d(z) is what we observe or measure, in our case the concentration as a function of depth in the sediment, and G is theoretically known. This equation is a Fredholm integral equation of the first kind with a square integrable kernel. The solution for m(t) in this equation is a classical example of a linear ill-posed problem; that is, the solution for m(t) is not unique and a small perturbation to the measured data can lead to an arbitrarily large, or unconstrained, change in the solution. (Hansen, 1998).

In real measurement cases, d(z) is always discrete, and so we are considering the discretized version of the integral equation, which is just the discrete Green's function. A discrete ill-posed problem always results from the discretization of a continuous ill-posed problem. Discrete ill-posed problems are almost always indeterminate so it is impossible to directly invert $\mathbf{G}$. Instead, all solutions must be some variant of a least-squares solution. Even in the rare case that a discrete ill-posed problem is full rank, the solution will be unstable to small perturbations or noise. Instability of discrete ill-posed problems is further compounded by the fact that a mathematically full-rank $\mathbf{G}$ can become numerically rank-deficient due to limitations in machine precision.

The SVD of $\mathbf{G}$ in an ill-posed problem has singular values and right and left singular vectors with particular properties that make the computation of a least-squares solution unstable. The shape and size of $\mathbf{G}$ are determined by the number of data points in $\mathbf{d}$ and the level of discretization of the problem. No matter how finely or roughly we discretize the problem, the singular values of the matrix $\mathbf{G}$ decay uniformly to 0 (or the machine

precision limit). The uniform decay of singular values to 0 means that our problem is "ill-posed" rather than simply being "rank-deficient". While the modes of $\mathbf{G}$ that correspond to very small singular values clearly do not contribute much to the solution, in practice it is difficult to truncate $\mathbf{G}$ and apply a truncated least-squares method to the problem, as there is no clear divide between large and small singular values. The left and right singular vectors associated with small singular values are highly oscillatory, with the number of zero crossings increasing monotonically with i (i representing the index of the singular value). In the forward problem, these oscillations are damped by being multiplied by small singular values. However, in the inverse problem, division by singular values leads to amplification of these oscillations, which are magnified in the presence of measurement noise.

The solution of linear ill-posed inverse problems requires some form of regularization or stabilization of the solution. A common and relatively simple technique is that found by solving a damped least squares problem, also known as Tikhonov regularization. In the following examples we primarily focus on various approaches to finding the inverse solution to Equation 2.8 using Tikhonov regularization. However, while the inverse solution to Equation 2.8 is an ill-posed problem, due to the limitations of machine precision, it is also *numerically* rank-deficient. As rank-deficient inverse problems can be solved efficiently using a truncated SVD of $\mathbf{G}$, we include a discussion of the inverse solutions we recover using a truncated least-squares method and compare it to the solutions we recover using regularization in place of truncation.

2.2.2.2 Truncated SVD solution

When $\mathbf{G}$ is not an invertible matrix, the least squares or generalized inverse solution $\mathbf{m}^\dagger$ to the inverse problem for $\mathbf{m}$ that satisfies

$$\mathbf{G}\mathbf{m} = \mathbf{d} \tag{2.11}$$

is written as

$$\mathbf{m}^\dagger = \mathbf{G}^\dagger \mathbf{d}\,, \tag{2.12}$$

where $\mathbf{G}^\dagger$ is

$$\mathbf{G}^\dagger = \left(\mathbf{G}^T\mathbf{G}\right)^{-1}\mathbf{G}^T\,, \tag{2.13}$$

which can be written in terms of the singular value decomposition of $\mathbf{G}$ as

$$\mathbf{m}^\dagger = \mathbf{V}\mathbf{S}^{-1}\mathbf{U}^T\mathbf{d}\,. \tag{2.14}$$

In a rank-deficient or ill-posed least squares inverse problem, the solution to Equation 2.14 will be unstable due to division by very small singular values when taking the inverse of $\mathbf{S}$. A rank-deficient problem is one in which $\mathbf{G}$ is not full rank and there is a clear divide between non-zero and zero singular values in $\mathbf{S}$. In the truncated SVD (TSVD) least squares inverse method, one simply truncates the small singular values and their corresponding left and right singular vectors in $\mathbf{V}$ and $\mathbf{U}$, and computes the generalized inverse $\mathbf{m}^\dagger$ using the TSVD. In a true rank-deficient inverse problem, the information associated with the missing rank modes can never be recovered; it is irreversibly lost by the rank-deficiency of the forward problem. Rank-deficient problems are thus distinct from discrete ill-posed problems, in which there is a very small but non-zero amount of information retained by the data about the modes associated with the small singular values.

2.2.2.3 Zeroth-order Tikhonov regularization

In a zeroth-order Tikhonov regularization, we look for the solution $\mathbf{m}$ with the smallest norm, that is

$$\min\, ||\mathbf{m}||_2 \tag{2.15}$$

that also satisfies

$$||\mathbf{G}\mathbf{m} - \mathbf{d}||_2 \leq \delta\,, \tag{2.16}$$

where δ represents the maximum tolerated error in the regularized solution. Constraining the norm of $\mathbf{m}$ has the effect of preferring small magnitude solutions, or, as we discuss later, represents the prior assumption that $\mathbf{m}$ is equal to $\mathbf{0}$. By using the method of Lagrange multipliers, we can reframe this optimization problem as the damped least

squares problem

$$\min \left|\left|\mathbf{Gm}-\mathbf{d}\right|\right|^2{}_2 + \alpha^2 \left|\left|\mathbf{m}\right|\right|^2{}_2 , \tag{2.17}$$

where α is the regularization or damping parameter. This is equivalent to an ordinary least squares problem:

$$\min \left|\left| \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{G} \\ \alpha\mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \mathbf{m} - \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{d} \\ \mathbf{0} \end{bmatrix} \right|\right|_2^2 , \tag{2.18}$$

which can be solved by the method of normal equations:

$$\begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{G}^T & \alpha\mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{G} \\ \alpha\mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \mathbf{m} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{G}^T & \alpha\mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{d} \\ \mathbf{0} \end{bmatrix} \tag{2.19}$$

or

$$\left(\mathbf{G}^T\mathbf{G} + \alpha^2\mathbf{I}\right)\mathbf{m} = \mathbf{G}^T\mathbf{d}. \tag{2.20}$$

Using the Singular Value Decomposition (SVD):

$$\mathbf{G} = \mathbf{USV^T} \tag{2.21}$$

the solution to the Tikhonov regularization as a function of α is given by:

$$\mathbf{m}_\alpha = \sum_{i=1}^{k} \frac{s_i^2}{s_i^2+\alpha^2} \frac{\left(\mathbf{U}_{.,i}\right)^T \mathbf{d}}{s_i} \mathbf{V}_{.,i} , \tag{2.22}$$

where $\mathbf{U}_{.,i}$ is the ith column of $\mathbf{U}$, $\mathbf{V}_{.,i}$ is the ith column of $\mathbf{V}$, and s_i is the ith singular value, that is, the ith diagonal component of S.

Thus the norm of the regularized inverse solution using this technique will always be smaller than (if not equal to) that of the true solution, since α^2 is always greater than 0.

2.2.2.4 Second-order Tikhonov regularization

An alternative way to constrain $\mathbf{m}$ is to require its derivatives to have a certain behavior. In our problem, we do not expect rapidly oscillating solutions, which we can express by penalizing solutions with large second derivatives. The damped least squares problem becomes:

$$\min \left|\left|\mathbf{Gm}-\mathbf{d}\right|\right|^2{}_2 + \alpha^2 \left|\left|\mathbf{Lm}\right|\right|^2{}_2 , \tag{2.23}$$

where $\mathbf{L}$ is a matrix representing a finite difference approximation to the second derivative of $\mathbf{m}$,

$$\mathbf{L} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & 1 & & & & \\ 1 & -2 & 1 & & & & \\ & 1 & -2 & 1 & & & \\ & & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & & \\ & & & 1 & -2 & 1 & \\ & & & & 1 & -2 & 1 \\ & & & & 1 & -2 & 1 \end{bmatrix} .$$

Note that the first and second rows and the second-to-last and last rows are identical. This feature is not a typo. We chose the approximation of the second derivative for the first and last elements to be forward and backward differences, while the rest are centered differences.

For this higher-order problem, we use the generalized SVD to compute the regularized solution. The notation for the generalized SVD varies; here we use the conventions applied in Hansen's regularization toolbox.

This version of the generalized SVD assumes $\mathbf{G}$ is an m by n matrix and $\mathbf{L}$ is p by n. The generalized SVD relies on matrices $\mathbf{U}$, $\mathbf{V}$, $\mathbf{\Lambda}$, $\mathbf{M}$ and $\mathbf{X}$. $\mathbf{G}$, assuming it is size m by n can be decomposed as:

$$\mathbf{G} = \mathbf{U} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{\Lambda} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \mathbf{X}^{-1} . \tag{2.24}$$

$\mathbf{U}$ is m by n with orthonormal columns, $\mathbf{X}$ is n by n and nonsingular, and $\mathbf{\Lambda}$ is p by p and diagonal, with diagonal elements

$$0 \leq \lambda_1 \leq \lambda_2 \leq \cdots \leq \lambda_p \leq 1\,. \tag{2.25}$$

The matrix $\mathbf{L}$ can be decomposed as:

$$\mathbf{L} = \mathbf{V}\begin{bmatrix}\mathbf{M} & \mathbf{0}\end{bmatrix}\mathbf{X}^{-1}\,, \tag{2.26}$$

$\mathbf{V}$ is p by p and orthogonal and $\mathbf{M}$ is a p by p diagonal matrix with

$$1 \geq \mu_1 \geq \mu_2 \geq \cdots \geq \mu_p > 0\,, \tag{2.27}$$

λ_i and μ_i are related by the relationship

$$\lambda_i^2 + \mu_i^2 = 1, \quad i = 1, 2, \ldots, p\,, \tag{2.28}$$

and the generalized singular values are

$$\gamma_i = \frac{\lambda_i}{\mu_i}\,. \tag{2.29}$$

Using these conventions, the regularized solution for a higher-order Tikhonov regularization where $\mathbf{L}$ is different from the identity matrix is:

$$\mathbf{m}_{\alpha,L} = \sum_{i=1}^{p} \frac{\gamma_i^2}{\gamma_i^2 + \alpha^2} \frac{\left(\mathbf{U}_{.,i}\right)^T \mathbf{d}}{\lambda_i} \mathbf{X}_{.,i} + \sum_{i=p+1}^{n} \left(\mathbf{U}_{.,i}^T \mathbf{d}\right) \mathbf{X}_{.,i} \tag{2.30}$$

2.2.2.5 Parameter choice

In theory we would like to choose a value for the damping parameter α that enables us to recover as much information as possible about the true value of $\mathbf{m}$. In practice, when we are inverting real data to find an input model, we can never determine whether we have obtained the true model. So, when we recover a single model from a regularized

inversion, there is no technique that guarantees the best choice of α. In recognition that the choice of α is always somewhat arbitrary, we consider some simple empirical methods to illustrate how varying α affects our example solutions.

In the zeroth-order Tikhonov regularization, any value of α comes with a trade-off between its effect on the solution error-norm $||\mathbf{Gm} - \mathbf{d}||_2$ and the model norm $||\mathbf{m}||_2$. In many problems, $||\mathbf{Gm} - \mathbf{d}||_2$ increases monotonically with α and $||\mathbf{m}||_2$ decreases monotonically with α. Due to these properties, the curve of $||\mathbf{m}||_2$ plotted against $||\mathbf{Gm} - \mathbf{d}||_2$ often has a characteristic L shape in log space, the corner of which would represent the best trade-off between damping and model size. The L-curve criterion of choosing α is the choice of α that gives the corner of the L-curve. One common way to find the damping parameter that corresponds to this corner is to fit a spline to the function and compute the point of maximum negative curvature (Hansen and O'Leary, 1993). To find the point of maximum negative curvature, one plots $||\mathbf{Gm} - \mathbf{d}||_2$ as the abscissa and $||\mathbf{m}||_2$ as the ordinate as a function of varying α. Another method that is essentially equivalent is to compute the minimum in the function $P(t) = ||\mathbf{m}||||\mathbf{Gm} - \mathbf{d}||$ (Johnston and Gulrajani, 2000, Lian et al., 1998). In the following examples, the L-curve is not very well-behaved; there is either no well-defined corner or two corners and thus both of these methods fail. For this reason, in the no-noise cases we show a few different magnitude values of α that return a close fit to the original synthetic model.

In the presence of noise, a sensible choice of α is one that satisfies the discrepancy principle. The discrepancy principle is to take the value of α for which the misfit $||\mathbf{Gm} - \mathbf{d}||_2$ is equal to the 2-norm error (noise) in the data. The underlying goal of the discrepancy principle is to ensure that the inverse solution does not overfit the noise in the data.

2.3 Results

2.3.1 Recovering a stretched sea level boundary condition

In this example we generate a synthetic data set that looks like an ideal "LGM-like" concentration profile. That is, it has a maximum chloride concentration several 10s of meters below the sediment–water interface that is the result of increased water salinity at the Last Glacial Maximum, due primarily to glacier expansion.

To generate the synthetic data set, at the sediment–water interface we use the same forcing function as that in Adkins et al. (2002), which is a scaled version of the sea-level curve extending back to 125 ka before present. We take the LGM salinity to be 38 g kg^{-1} and the modern salinity as 35 g kg^{-1} and use the difference between these two to scale the sea level curve to salinity assuming that the ocean is a rectangular basin that is today 3800 m deep. At the bottom boundary, we set $\frac{\partial c}{\partial z} = 0$. ϕ is a constant 0.8, u is a constant 0.01 cm yr^{-1} and D_0 is 2.9×10^{-6} cm^2 s^{-1}. The initial condition is a uniform profile, $c(z) = 35$ g kg^{-1}.

Once we have a synthetic data set, we apply various inverse methods to the synthetic data to recover the original forcing function or model, $\mathbf{m}$. We then can evaluate the skill of the inverse methods by comparing the inverse solution in each case to the synthetic model we used to generate the data. The data used for the inverse problem is the actual data minus the initial condition response. In this way we avoid inverting for the initial condition. The model that we invert for is the top (sediment–water interface) boundary condition.

In the following cases we compare several different levels of discretization of the problem. Table 2.1 summarizes the characteristics of the $\mathbf{G}$s. The coarsest resolution $\mathbf{G}$ was chosen to be square and to have a spatial resolution similar to the typical measurement spatial resolution.

Table 2.1: Summary of **G** properties

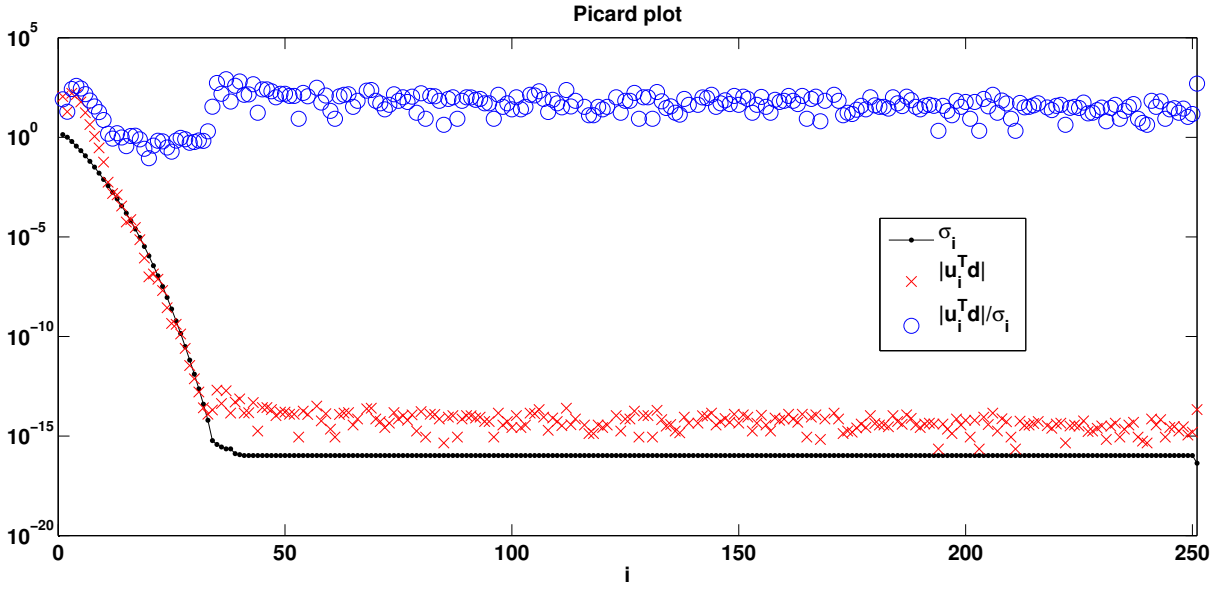
Dimensions of **G**	Δ z (cm)	Δ t (yrs)	Time domain (yrs)	Space domain (m)
251 x 251	50	500	125,000	125
301 x 626	50	200	125,000	150
301 x 1251	50	100	125,000	150

2.3.1.1 Properties of G

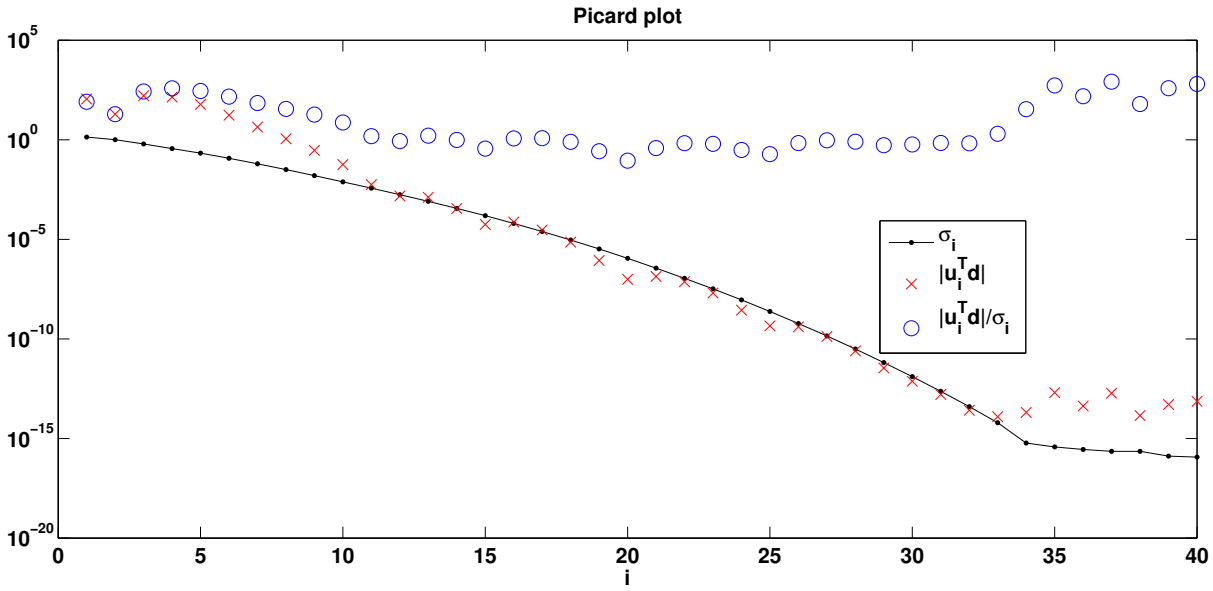
Figure 2.2 illustrates the general behavior of the **G** matrix. (a) is the full Picard plot, while (b) is zoomed in on the singular values above the noise floor. σ_i are the singular values of **G**, $|u_i^T d/\sigma_i|$ are the magnitudes of the modes contributing to the generalized inverse solution, and the coefficients $|u_i^T d|$ are known as the Fourier coefficients. This type of figure is called a "Picard Plot" as it illustrates whether the Picard condition is satisfied for the generalized inverse problem $\mathbf{m}^\dagger = \mathbf{G}^\dagger \mathbf{d}$. In order for the generalized inverse solution to be stable, the Picard condition requires that at some point the Fourier coefficients must decay faster than their corresponding σ_i values. We can see that the Picard condition is **not** satisfied, as the Fourier coefficients oscillate around the singular values, which means that determination of a stable generalized inverse will require regularization. The decay of the singular values is smooth until the singular values reach a noise floor around the 33rd value. Without the machine precision limit, we expect these values to continue to decay smoothly towards 0. The inversion of **G** to find **m** is an ill-posed problem; there is no clear cut-off between large magnitude and small magnitude parts of the solution. The very small singular values will amplify any noise in the data vector when we compute generalized inverse solutions.

2.3.1.2 TSVD least squares inverse solution

Although the inverse problem is ill-posed, the numerical rank deficiency of **G** hints that we may be able to at least partially stabilize our generalized inverse solution by truncating the SVD at the noise floor. In Figure 2.3 we show the results of truncation beyond the 33rd singular value, using the restriction that singular values must be greater than 10*eps,



(a)

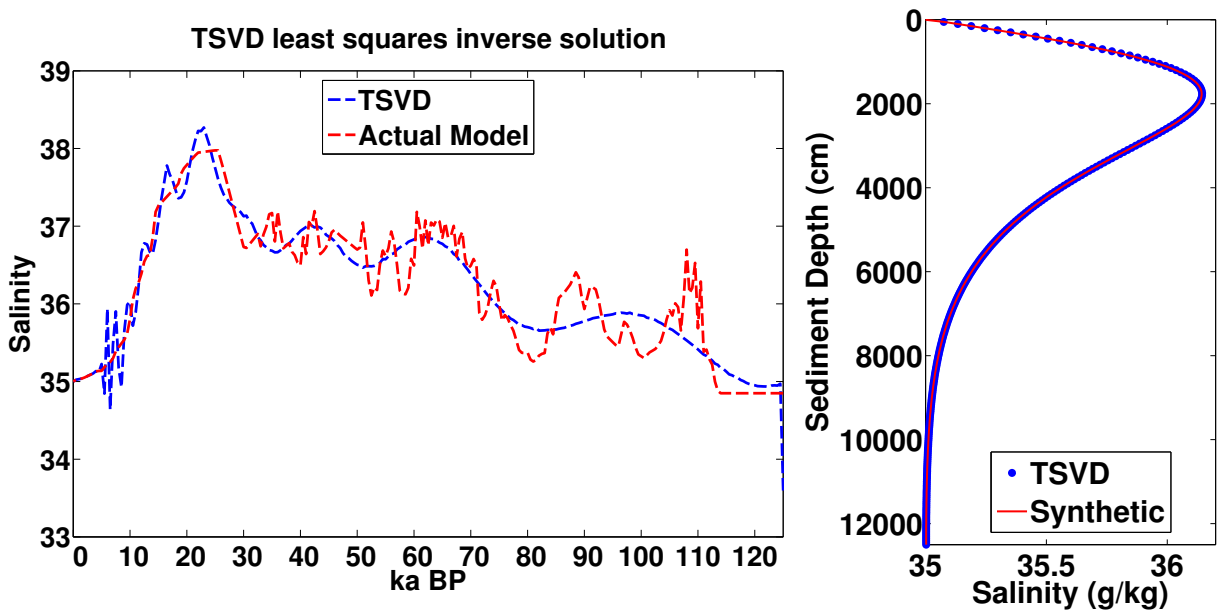


(b)

Figure 2.2: Picard plot for **G** size 251 x 251. (a) is the full plot, while (b) is zoomed in on the singular values above the noise floor. σ_i are the singular values of **G**. The coefficients $|u_i^T d|$ are known as the Fourier coefficients, and the Picard condition requires that at some point these must decay faster than their corresponding values σ_i in order for the inverse solution to be convergent and stable. $|u_i^T d/\sigma_i|$ are the magnitudes of the modes contributing to the generalized inverse solution.

where eps is the machine precision of a double, 2.2×10^{-16}.

Despite the fact that we have truncated many of the small singular values, the model recovered using TSVD has artificial oscillations that are not in the synthetic model between



(a) (b)

Figure 2.3: (a) shows the synthetic model (red) used to generate synthetic data and the model recovered using the TSVD method (blue). (b) is the synthetic data (red) generated by the synthetic model and used to find the inverse solution plotted against the data generated by the recovered model using TSVD (blue).

5 ka BP and 30 ka BP, and is artificially smooth relative to the true synthetic model between 30 ka BP and 125 ka BP. The artificial smoothness we can understand as information lost through the truncation of some of the modes of the solution. The artificial oscillations, however, are evidence of instability in the generalized inverse solution. The instability in the generalized inverse is due to the fact that the Picard condition is not satisfied even when we truncate the singular values below the noise floor. Referring back to Figure 2.2b, we see that the Fourier coefficients and singular values decay at roughly the same rate between i=10 and i=33.

From i=3 to i=10, the Fourier coefficients do decay faster than the singular values, so we might consider an even more severe truncation at i=10. However, the condition number of $\mathbf{G}_T$, the truncated version of $\mathbf{G}$, is 86 when we truncate at i=10. The condition number represents approximately the ratio of the error in the generalized inverse solution to the error in the data vector $\mathbf{d}$; a matrix with condition number 86 is therefore quite unstable to noise in the data. In addition, truncation at i=10 forces us to lose the ability to recover the vast majority of modes in the original synthetic model.

We cannot approximate our ill-posed problem as a rank-deficient problem without losing more information than necessary, and truncation does not sufficiently stabilize the generalized inverse $\mathbf{G}^{\dagger}$. Therefore, in the remainder of our discussion we focus on the use of Tikhonov regularization to stabilize the generalized inverse solutions, rather than truncating the modes associated with small singular values. However, we can not expect to recover much, if any, information about modes associated with singular values above i=33.

2.3.1.3 Zeroth order Tikhonov regularization

Figure 2.4 shows the L-curve for the zeroth-order regularization of G size 251x251 on both a linear (left) and logarithmic (right) scale. This curve does not have a corner, leading to failure of curvature methods in the selection of α. For illustration purposes, we show several different orders of magnitude of α and their effect on the solution.

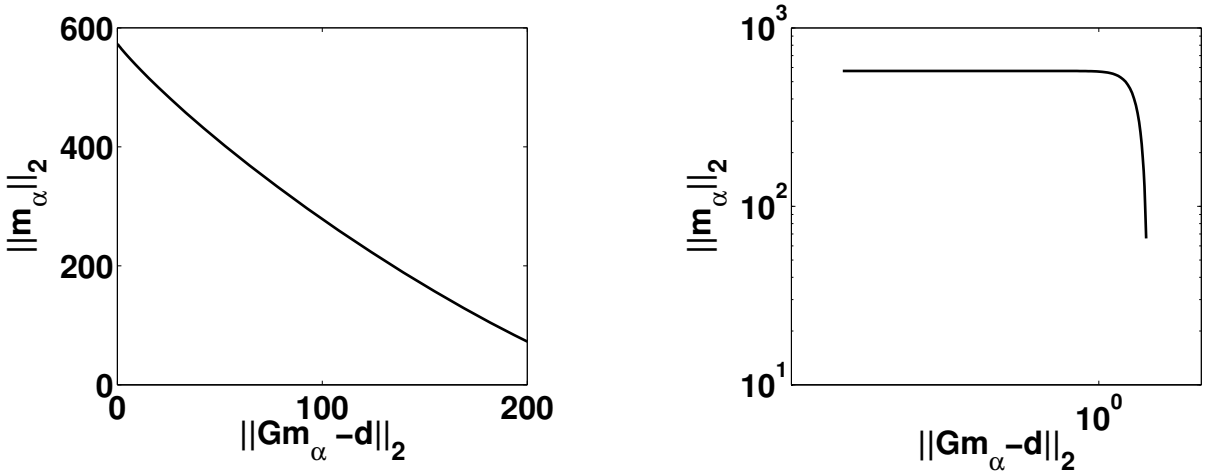


Figure 2.4: L-curve for G size 251 x 251, 0th order Tikhonov regularization. $||\mathbf{Gm}_\alpha - \mathbf{d}||_2$ is the 2-norm of the error between the data and the output generated by the regularized solution. $||\mathbf{m}_\alpha||_2$ is the 2-norm of the regularized solution, $\mathbf{m}_\alpha$, which is a function of the regularization parameter α.

Figures 2.5, 2.6, and 2.7 show the 0th order Tikhonov regularization using varying size α and discretizations for $\mathbf{G}$. For each combination of α and discretization, we show the synthetic model plotted on the same figure as the model recovered from the synthetic data using Tikhonov regularization in the inverse least squares problem. To the right of the model time series is the synthetic data used as input to the inverse problem plotted

alongside the data generated using the regularized inverse solution as forcing to the forward model. In all of these cases without noise, the regularized least squares solution, used as a boundary condition to the forward model, generates data indistinguishable from the synthetic data.

Even when α is close to 0, as shown in Figure 2.5 where $\alpha = 10^{-14}$, the oscillations in the synthetic model between 30 ka and 125 ka BP are not recovered in the inverse solution. This is not a function of resolution, as demonstrated by the fact that when $\mathbf{G}$ has 100 year temporal resolution (size 301x1251) there are even higher frequency artificial oscillations between 0 and 10 ka BP in the recovered time series. The recovered time series between 30 ka and 125 ka BP is strikingly similar to the values recovered over the same time period by the TSVD method. We therefore conclude that the information lost is that of the modes associated with the singular values below the noise floor. We do not lose this information due to damping, but because they are unrecoverable because of the limitations of machine precision.

Increased discretization in time in general does not enable us to recover any more information from the signal. The one exception is perhaps shown in Figure 2.6 where the increase in resolution from $\mathbf{G}$ size 251x251 to size 301x626 enables more of the pattern from 30 to 125 ka BP to appear in the regularized inverse solution. High frequency variability is not recovered from the data by the regularization; however, the very large maximum around 20ky before present seems well recovered, as are the mean slope of approach and retreat from this maximum. Instead of increasing information recovery, the near-present oscillations in Figure 2.5e demonstrate that increased discretization, without an equivalent increase in damping, enhances the instability of the inverse solution.

2.3.1.4 Zeroth order Tikhonov regularization with noise

In the previous example we used perfect data as input to the regularizations. In reality, there will always be noise in the data due to measurement error. To simulate measurement error, we add white noise to the synthetic data profile. We then choose a regularization parameter using the discrepancy principle to ensure that we do not overfit the noise.

Figures 2.8, 2.9, and 2.10 show the results of regularized inversions with increasingly larger magnitudes of simulated measurement noise and increasing resolution of $\mathbf{G}$. Accounting for noise requires the use of a larger damping parameter, which increases the bias of the solution and decreases the value of the reconstructed LGM salinity. Further, the noisier the data, the more oscillatory the regularized solution becomes in the approach to the present. This problem worsens with increased resolution of $\mathbf{G}$. These oscillations are not present in the original synthetic model; they are entirely a product of the instability of the regularized inverse.

The near-present oscillations are the result of unstable oscillatory modes associated with small singular values being smeared into the near-present solution. In order to damp these oscillations, we can increase the damping parameter, but this would increase the damping everywhere in the solution. With increasingly resolved $\mathbf{G}$, the oscillatory nature of the solutions becomes worse. The increasingly resolved $\mathbf{G}$ is increasingly underdetermined and has more modes associated with very small singular values. The number of well-resolved singular values remains essentially constant with resolution of $\mathbf{G}$ ($\mathcal{O}(10)$), but the number of minute singular values and associated unstable modes increases with increasing discretization.

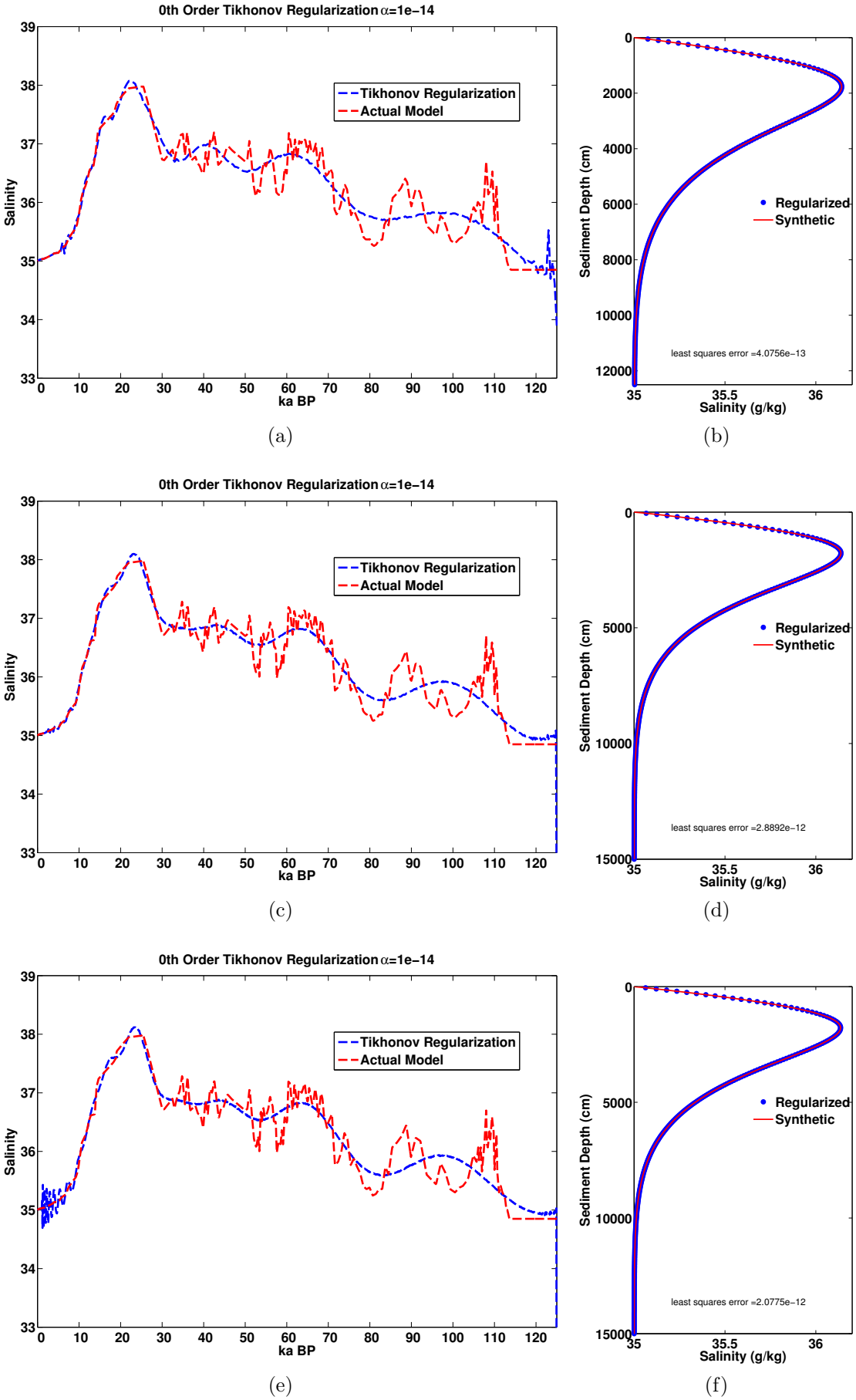


Figure 2.5: 0th order Tikhonov regularization, no noise. The damping parameter α = 1e-14 for all cases. (a) **G** 251 x 251 (c) **G** 301 x 626 (e) **G** 301 x 1251.

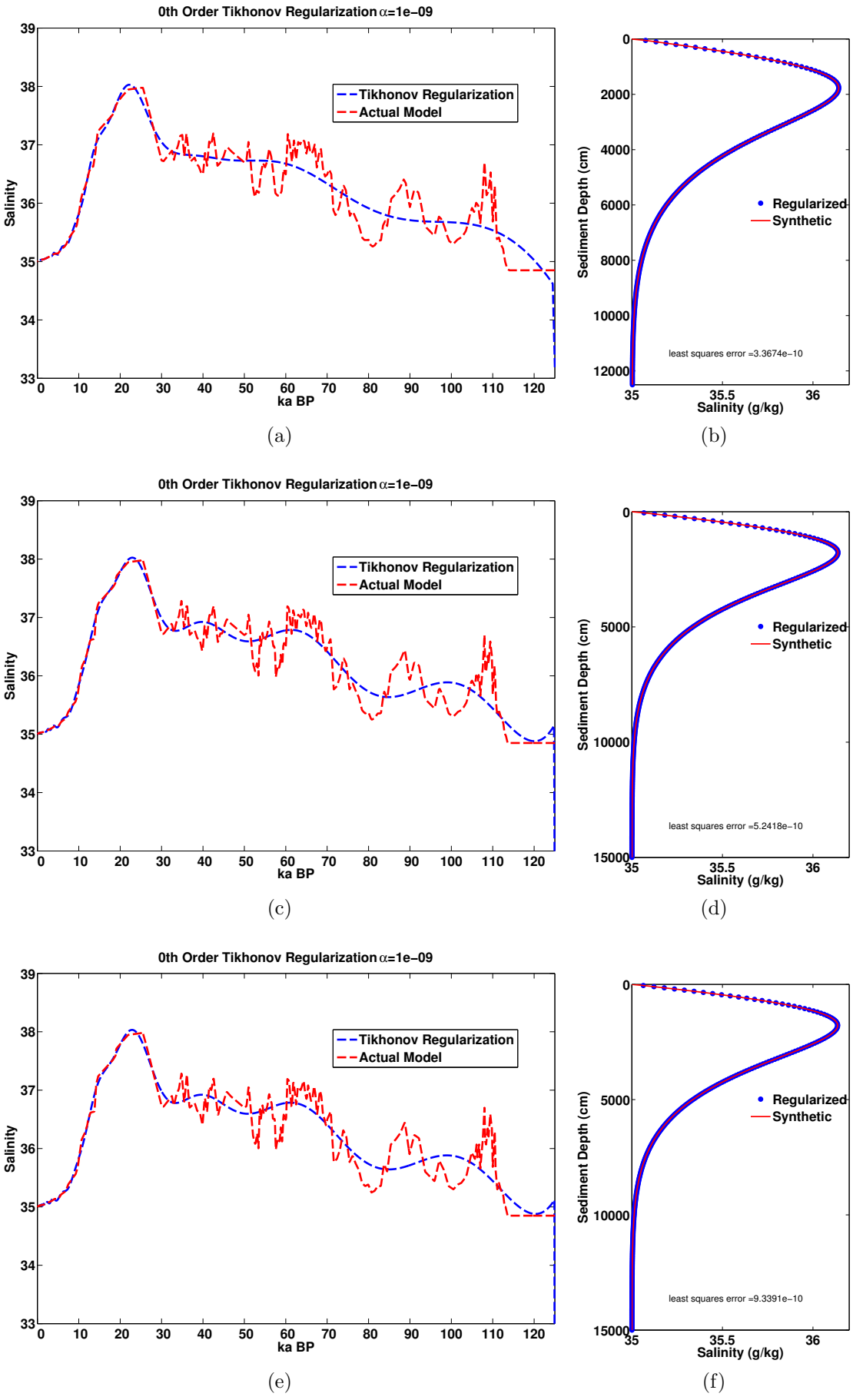


Figure 2.6: 0th order Tikhonov regularization, no noise. The damping parameter α = 1e-9 for all cases. (a) **G** 251 x 251 (c) **G** 301 x 626 (e) **G** 301 x 1251.

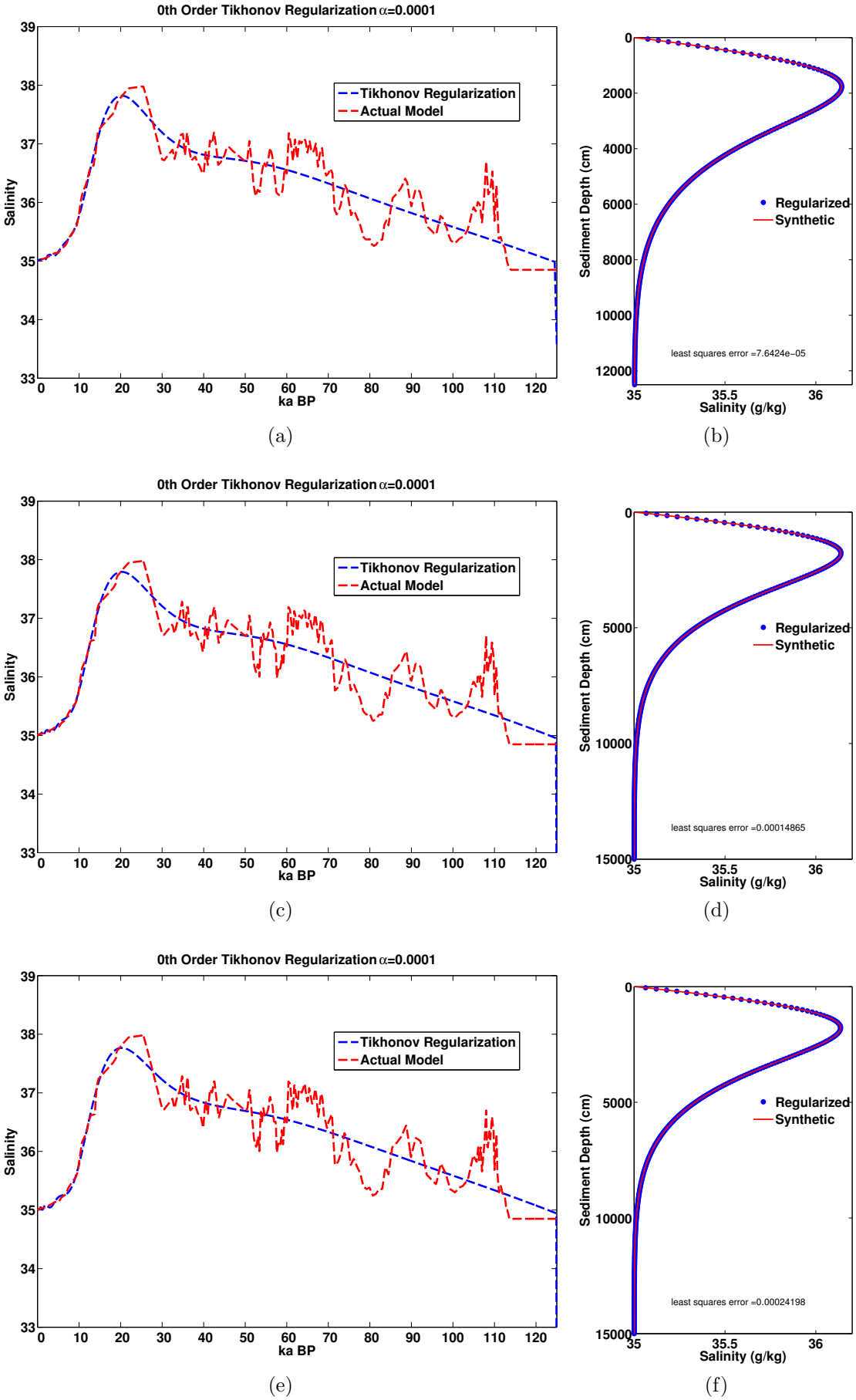


Figure 2.7: 0th order Tikhonov regularization, no noise. The damping parameter α = 1e-4 for all cases. (a) **G** 251 x 251 (c) **G** 301 x 626 (e) **G** 301 x 1251.

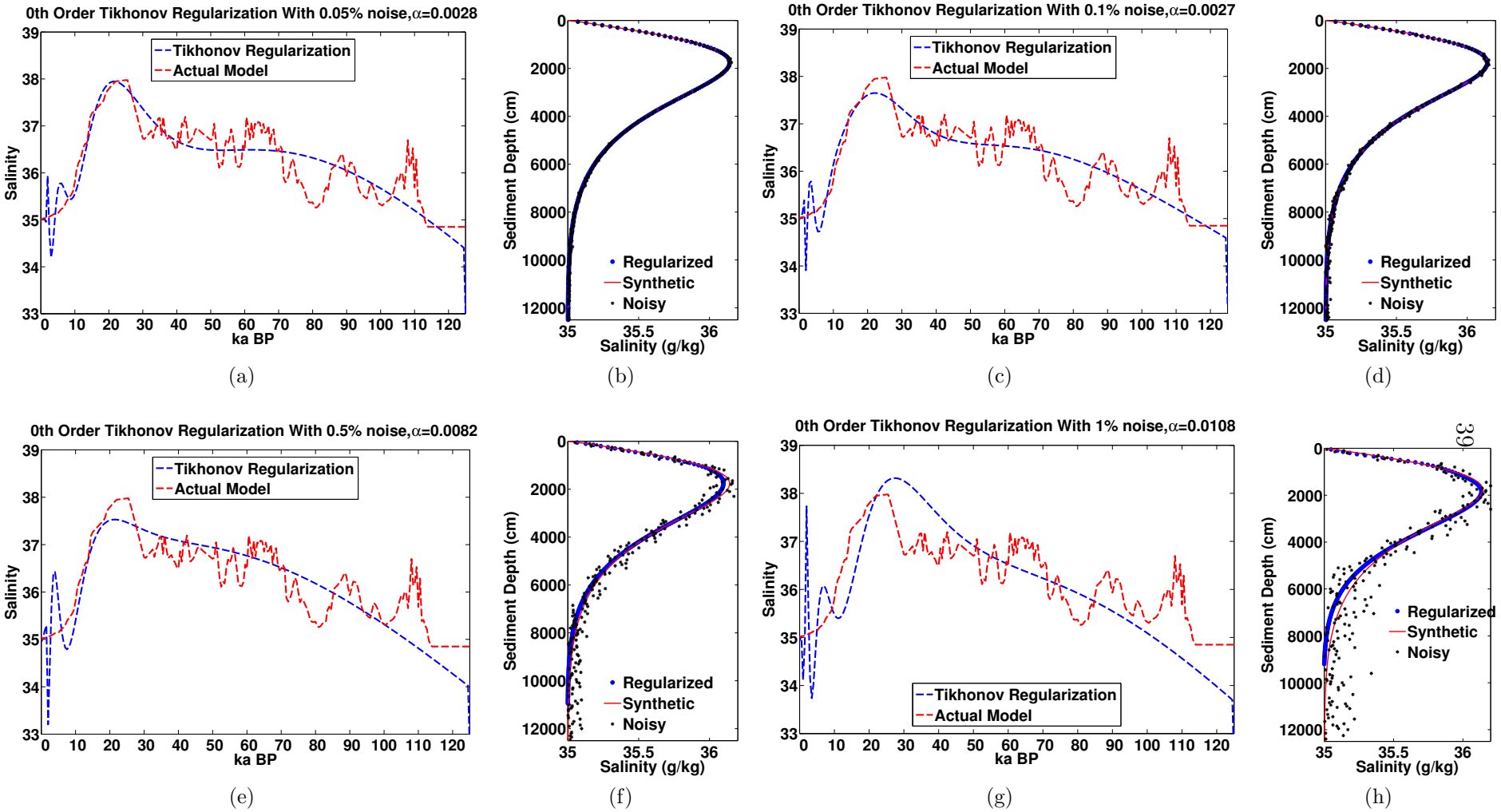


Figure 2.8: 0th order Tikhonov regularization with noise, **G** 251 x 251. Damping parameter α is chosen using the discrepancy principle. (a) 0.05% noise (c) 0.1% noise (e) 0.5% noise (g) 1% noise.

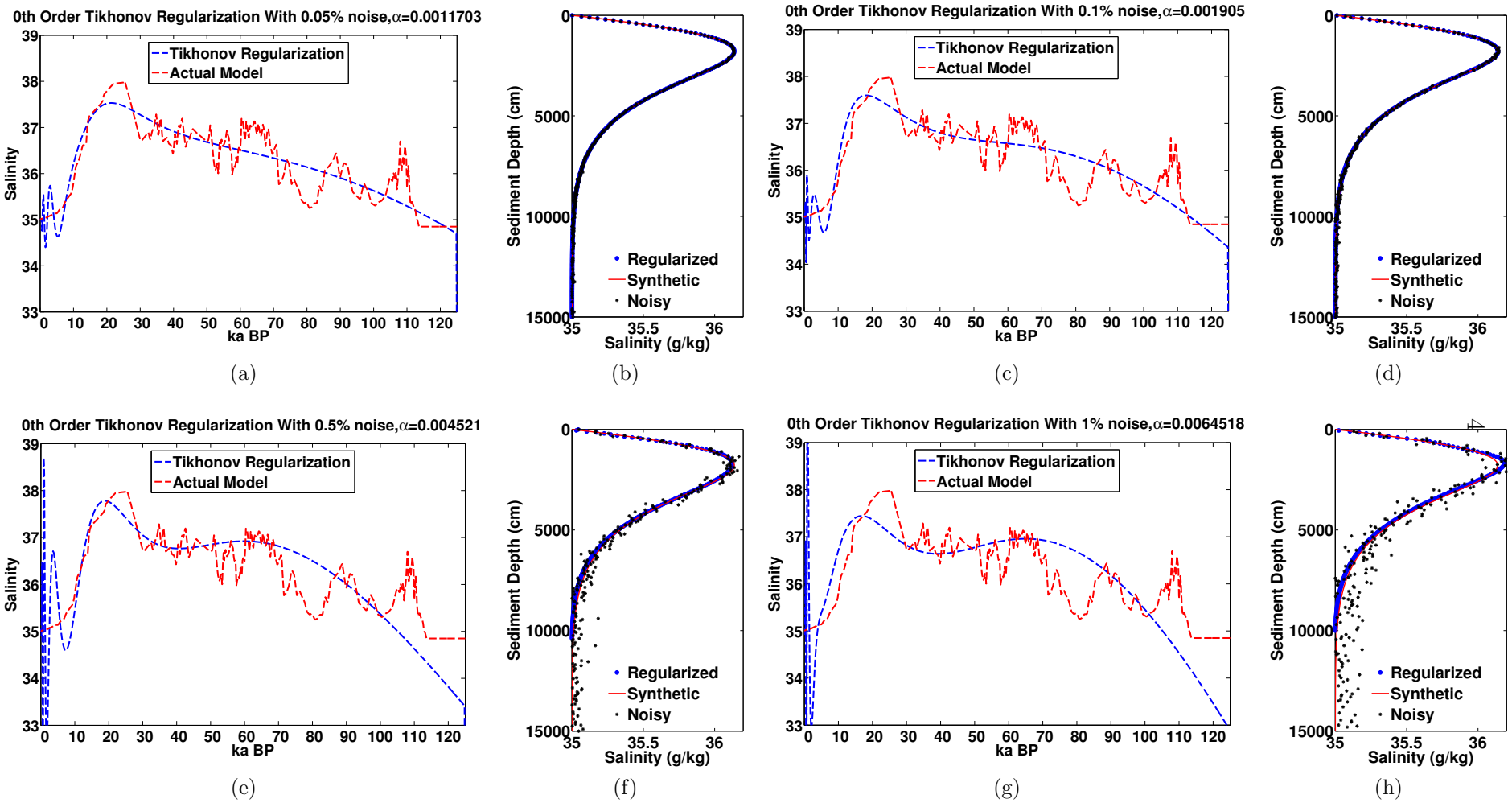


Figure 2.9: 0th order Tikhonov regularization with noise, $\mathbf{G}$ 301 x 626. Damping parameter α is chosen using the discrepancy principle. (a) 0.05% noise (c) 0.1% noise (e) 0.5% noise (g) 1% noise.

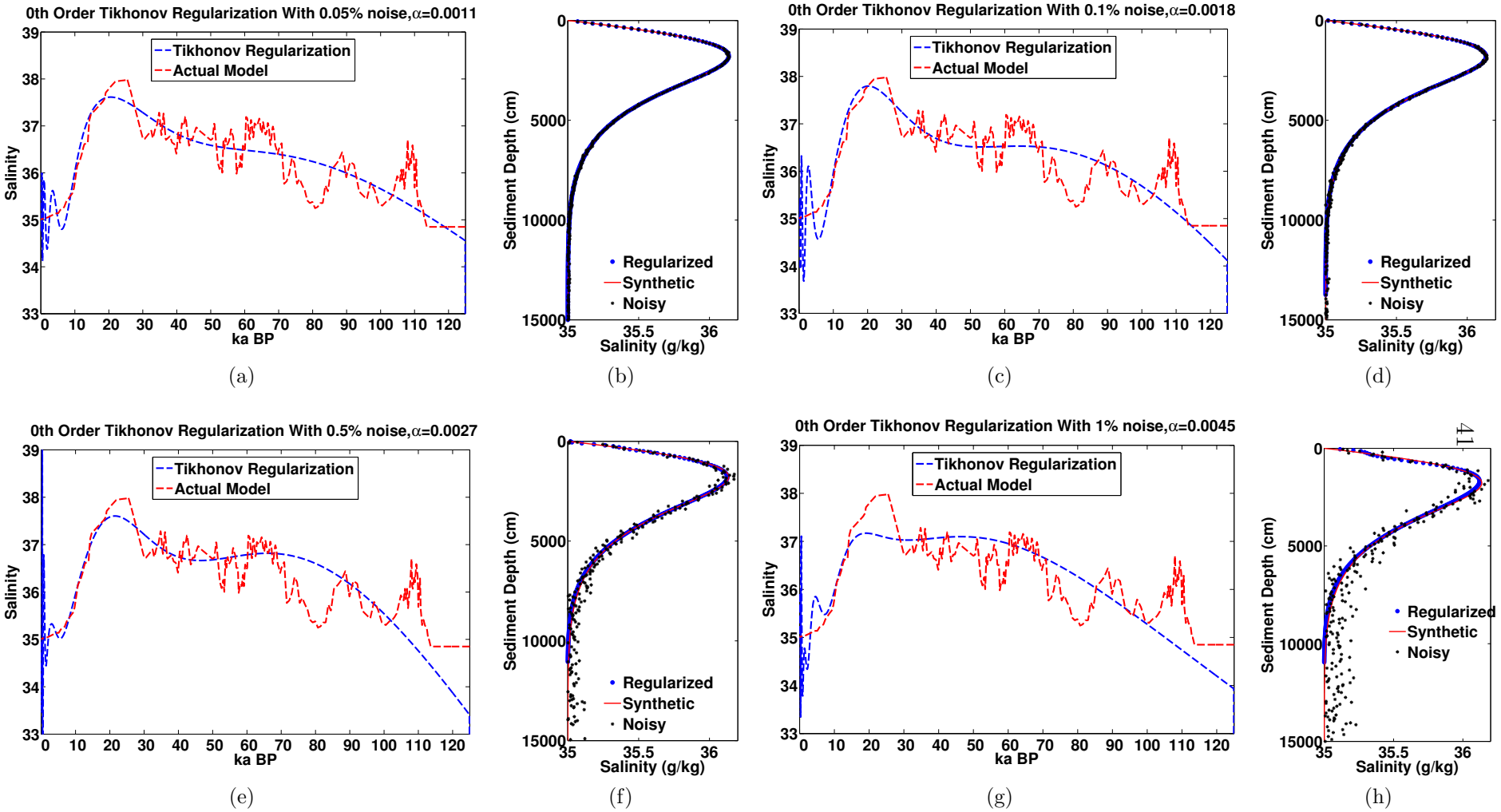


Figure 2.10: 0th order Tikhonov regularization with noise, $\mathbf{G}$ 301 x 1251. Damping parameter α is chosen using the discrepancy principle.(a) 0.05% noise. (c) 0.1% noise (e) 0.5% noise (g) 1% noise.

2.3.1.5 Resolution of the inverse solution

The oscillations of near-present solution components is confusing, as our intuition tells us that the information closer to the present should be better constrained than the information in the past. This is true, but in a regularized inversion the behavior of poorly resolved modes is spread or smeared among parameters. One way to see this effect more clearly is by examining the resolution matrix. The resolution matrix describes the averaging behavior of the regularization. Recall that

$$\mathbf{G}\mathbf{m}_{true} = \mathbf{d} \tag{2.31}$$

and the generalized inverse solution $\mathbf{m}^{\dagger}$ is related to the true solution in this way:

$$\mathbf{m}^{\dagger} = \mathbf{G}^{\dagger}\mathbf{d} = \mathbf{G}^{\dagger}\mathbf{G}\mathbf{m}_{\mathbf{true}} = \mathbf{R}_{\mathbf{m}}\mathbf{m}_{\mathbf{true}}\,. \tag{2.32}$$

A perfect resolution solution would have $\mathbf{R}_{\mathbf{m}}$ equal to the identity matrix. Otherwise, $\mathbf{R}_{\mathbf{m}}$ is a symmetric matrix that describes how much the generalized inverse solution smears the original model $\mathbf{m}$ into the recovered model $\mathbf{m}^{\dagger}$.

In the 0th order Tikhonov regularizations, the recovered model is

$$\mathbf{m}_{\alpha} = \left(\mathbf{G}^{T}\mathbf{G} + \alpha^{2}\mathbf{I}\right)^{-1}\mathbf{G}^{T}\mathbf{d} = \mathbf{G}^{\#}\mathbf{d}\,, \tag{2.33}$$

so

$$\mathbf{R}_{m,\alpha} = \mathbf{G}^{\#}\mathbf{G} = \mathbf{V}\mathbf{F}\mathbf{V}^{T}\,, \tag{2.34}$$

where $\mathbf{V}$ takes its traditional meaning from the SVD of $\mathbf{G}$ and $\mathbf{F}$ is a diagonal matrix with diagonal elements equal to the filter factors:

$$f_i = \frac{s_i^2}{s_i^2 + \alpha^2}\,. \tag{2.35}$$

All of the elements of $\mathbf{R}_{\mathbf{m},\alpha}$ take values between 0 and 1. 1 implies perfect resolution while

0 means none of the information about the parameter is recovered in the right place. By examining the diagonal of $\mathbf{R}_{\mathbf{m},\alpha}$, we can see how well each model parameter is resolved by $\mathbf{G}$. Figures 2.11a, 2.11c, 2.11e are plots of the diagonal of $\mathbf{R}_{\mathbf{m},\alpha}$ for various values of α. The x-axis corresponds to the past time associated with each model element and the y-axis is the associated diagonal value of the resolution matrix. In all cases, the resolution of the model elements recovered by the regularized inverse are better closer to the present. As the damping parameter α increases, the drop-off in resolution with time in the past becomes steeper, as evidenced by the fact that the curves are stacked vertically with the smallest damping parameter curves at the top (closest to 1) and the largest damping parameter curves have resolution diagonals less than 0.1.

In the best case scenarios shown, with $\alpha = 10^{-8}(\alpha^2 = 10^{-16})$, seven times are perfectly resolved in the regularized inverse. When α^2 increases to 10, all of the model elements are poorly resolved in the regularized inverse, with maximum diagonal of the resolution matrix equal to 0.1. The number of parameters resolved by the regularization does not vary much with differing discretization, but the positions of the well-resolved parameters shift forward in time as the discretization increases relative to their positions in the more roughly discretized problem. Figures 2.11a, 2.11c, 2.11e have the same x-axis limits, but the maximum age with a resolution diagonal equal to one in these plots is 3000 years BP for $\mathbf{G}$ size 251x151, while only 700 years BP for $\mathbf{G}$ size 301x1251.

The columns of the resolution matrix show how information of each parameter is smeared into other parameters. A visually informative technique is to look at the behavior of a spike model (unit step change) in response to the resolution matrix. Since we are especially interested in reconstructing the LGM, we show the results of a spike test positioned at the LGM, roughly 20,000 years BP. For consistency between different $\mathbf{G}$s the spike test is 1000 years long. We use $\alpha = 10^{-4}$ in the spike test because use of the discrepancy principle in the regularized inversions with noise consistently required $\alpha \geq 10^{-4}$.

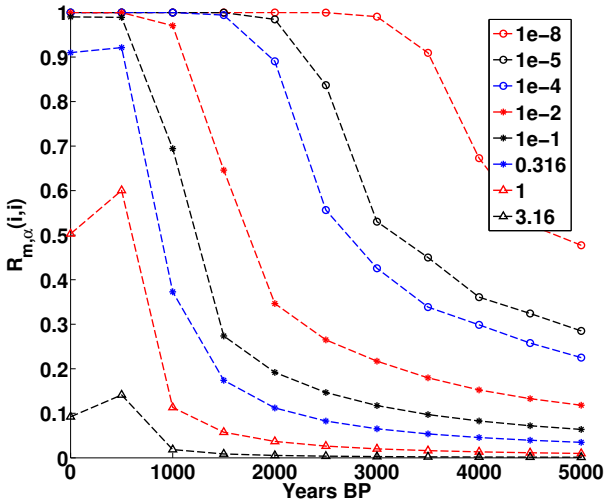
Figures 2.11b, 2.11d, and 2.11f demonstrate that the information at the LGM is poorly resolved by the inverse solution. The diagonal element in all discretizations of $\mathbf{G}$ is < 0.2 and the bulk of the signal has been spread tens of thousands of years both forwards and backwards in time. Apparently, the regularization's seeming recovery of the LGM's

magnitude in Figures 2.8, 2.9, and 2.10 was actually an artifact of the smoothness of our synthetic model; information has been smeared from other times into the LGM.

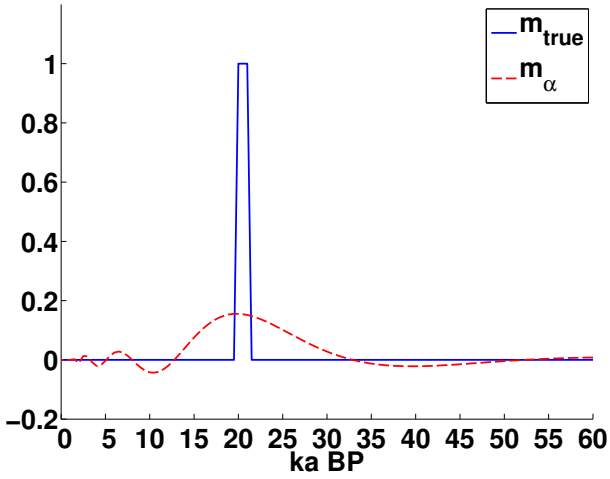
The spike test also demonstrates that the smeared contribution of past information to the near-present solution is quite oscillatory. Thus the oscillatory behavior we see in the modern solution under noise is in part a result of smearing forward of poorly resolved older components amplified by the magnitude of the noise.

As a general principle, the left and right singular vectors associated with smaller singular values have more zero crossings (number of zero crossings increases with i). While these oscillations are damped in the forward problem when multiplied by small singular values, the recovery of inverse solutions with the singular value in the denominator amplifies high frequency variations. In this case, noise appears as a high frequency variation.

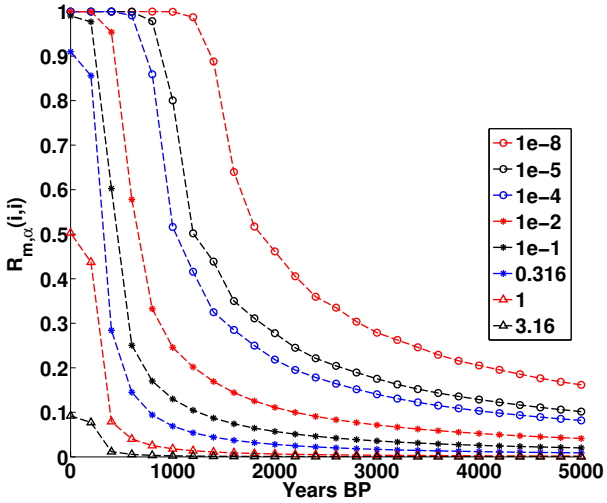
With increased damping parameter, the smearing of oscillations is increased. The near-present values are not smeared as much as the older values, but they preferentially receive smeared information from the older values. When summed with the well-resolved near-present information, this smearing leads to the initially counterintuitive high magnitude oscillations.



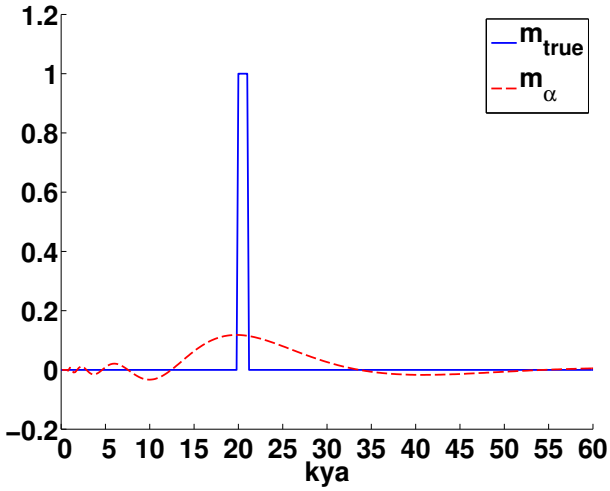
(a)



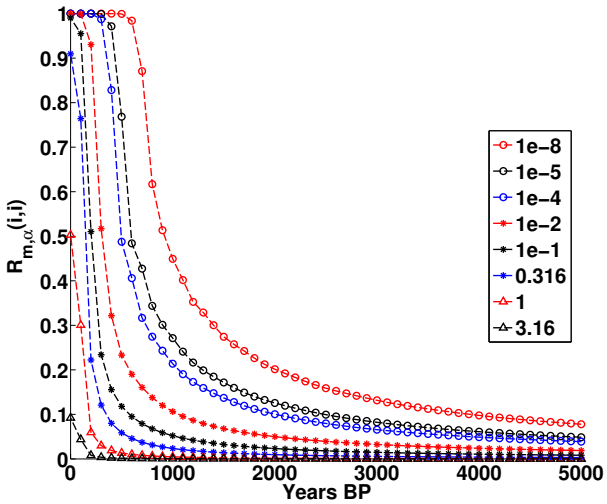
(b)



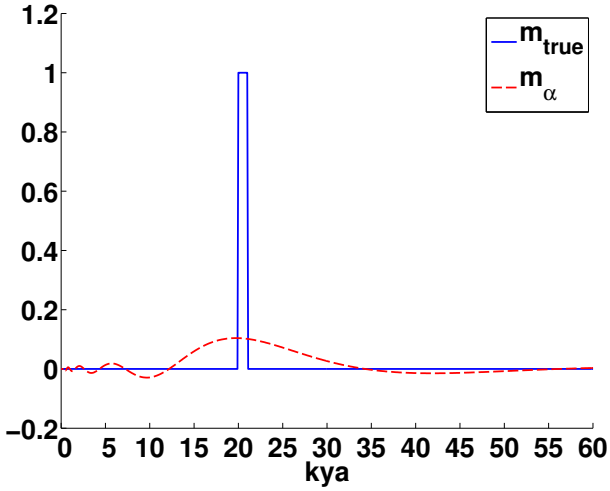
(c)



(d)



(e)



(f)

Figure 2.11: (a) **G** 251x251 resolution matrix diagonals as a function of α (b) **G** 251 x 251 resolution matrix LGM spike test (c) **G** 301 x 626 resolution matrix diagonals as a function of α (d) **G** 301 x 626 resolution matrix LGM spike test (e) **G** 301 x 1251 resolution matrix diagonals as a function of α (f) **G** 301 x 1251 resolution matrix LGM spike test using α = 1e-04.

2.3.1.6 Second order Tikhonov regularization

In order to reduce the oscillatory behavior of the solution we can perform a second order Tikhonov regularization. The second order Tikhonov regularization penalizes the norm of the second derivative of the solution, and thus prefers solutions with fewer minima and maxima, which will reduce the solution's oscillatory behavior. Note that using this method, the minimum magnitude of α for a smooth solution is smaller than that for the zeroth-order regularization, as demonstrated in Figures 2.12–2.14. The magnitudes are not directly comparable because they have different units; in the zeroth-order case we damp the amplitude of the solution while in the second-order regularization we damp the second derivative. In the noisy cases, Figures 2.15–2.17, the boundary condition recovered using the regularization is much smoother than the synthetic boundary condition, and has a wider and lower magnitude LGM. Also, the concentration profile produced by using the regularized model as the forcing condition has a much larger error. Because the penalty on the second derivative is applied uniformly to the solution, it flattens the maximum corresponding to the LGM as well as reducing the unwanted oscillations.

The second order regularization is much more stable than the zeroth order regularization, but it still does not resolve individual model parameters very well, as shown in Figure 2.18 which is the resolution matrix for different values of α. In this case, more information is smeared backward in time rather than forward, explaining the long-period oscillation in the old time nodes.

The example we are inverting for is quite smooth, and a case with higher frequency variability would not be recovered well by the second-order Tikhonov regularized inversion. This method does penalize more rapidly oscillating solutions over slowly oscillating solutions, however there is no specific frequency dependence to the penalty. Ideally we want a penalty on solutions that oscillate more rapidly than physically sensible, while allowing physically reasonable oscillations. One way to do this is to use a variable damping parameter α. Next we consider one particular choice of variable α and its effect on our ability to recover our synthetic time series.

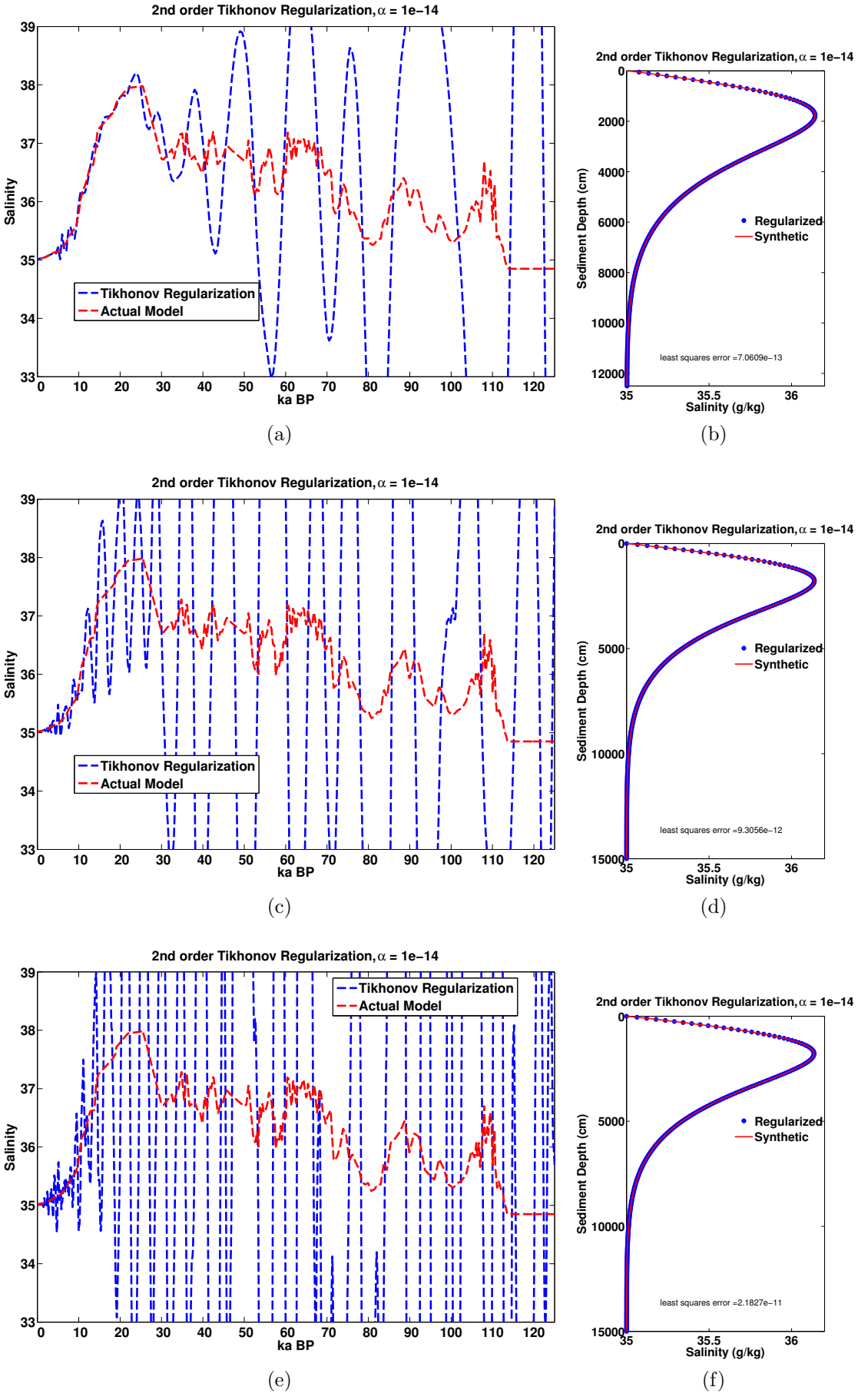


Figure 2.12: 2nd order regularization, no noise, using α =1e-14 (a) $\mathbf{G}$ 251 x 251 (c) $\mathbf{G}$ 301 x 626 (e) $\mathbf{G}$ 301 x 1251.

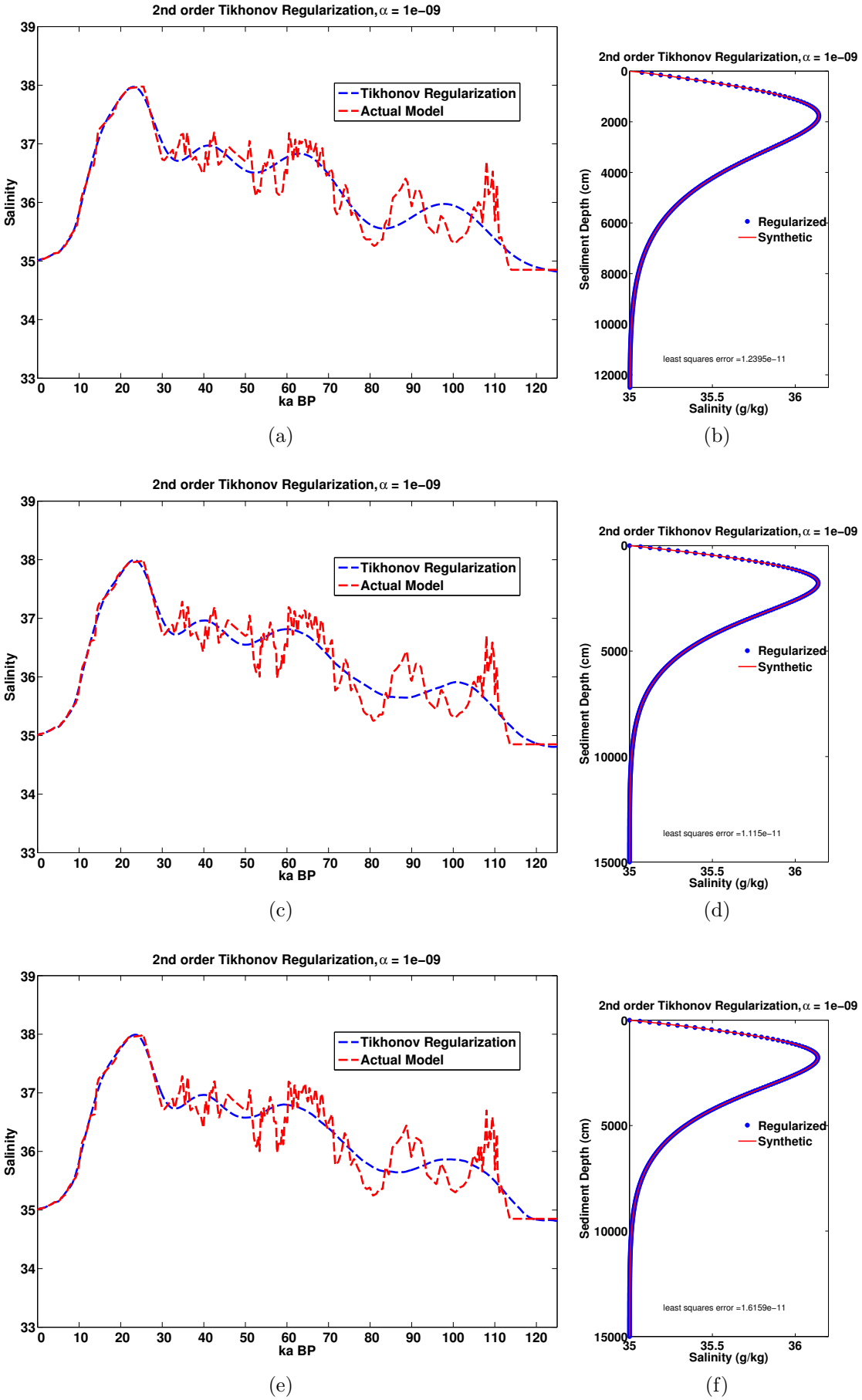


Figure 2.13: 2nd order regularization, no noise, using α = 1e-9 (a) **G** 251 x 251 (c) **G** 301 x 626 (e) **G** 301 x 1251.

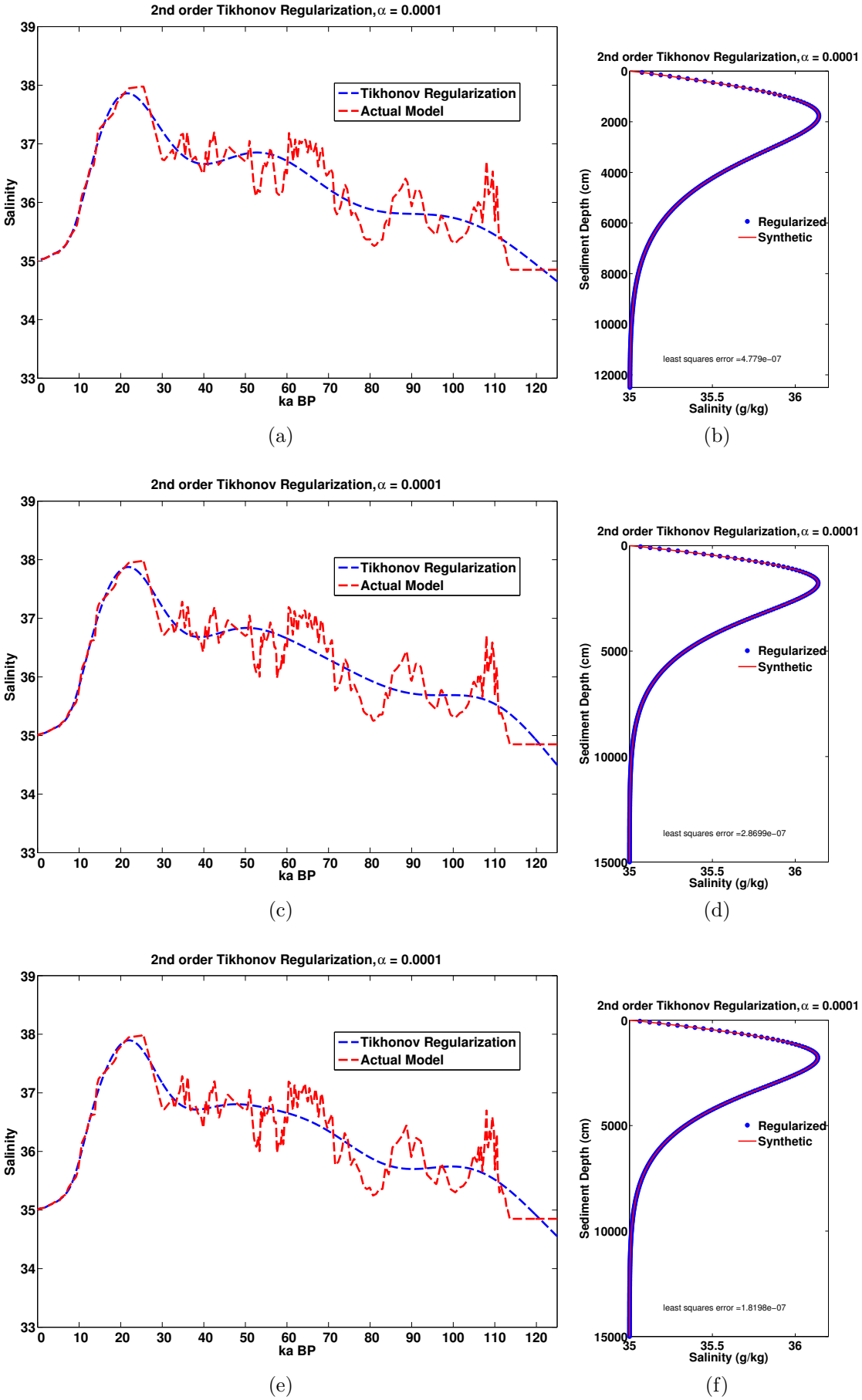


Figure 2.14: 2nd order regularization, no noise, using α = 1e-4 (a) **G** 251 x 251 (c) **G** 301 x 626 (e) **G** 301 x 1251.

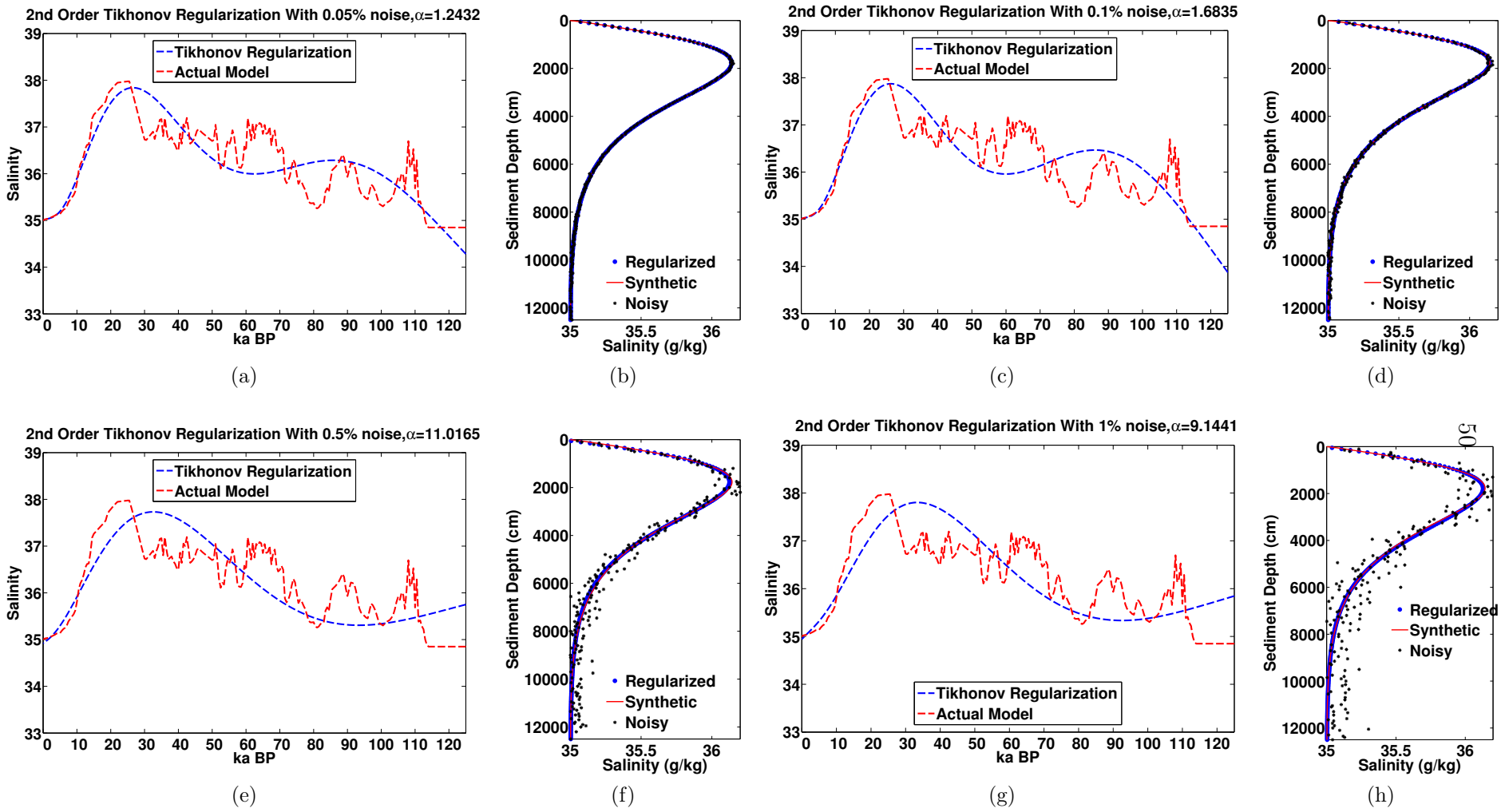


Figure 2.15: 2nd order regularization with noise, α chosen with discrepancy principle, $\mathbf{G}$ 251 x 251. (a) 0.05% noise (c) 0.1% noise (e) 0.5% noise (g) 1% noise.

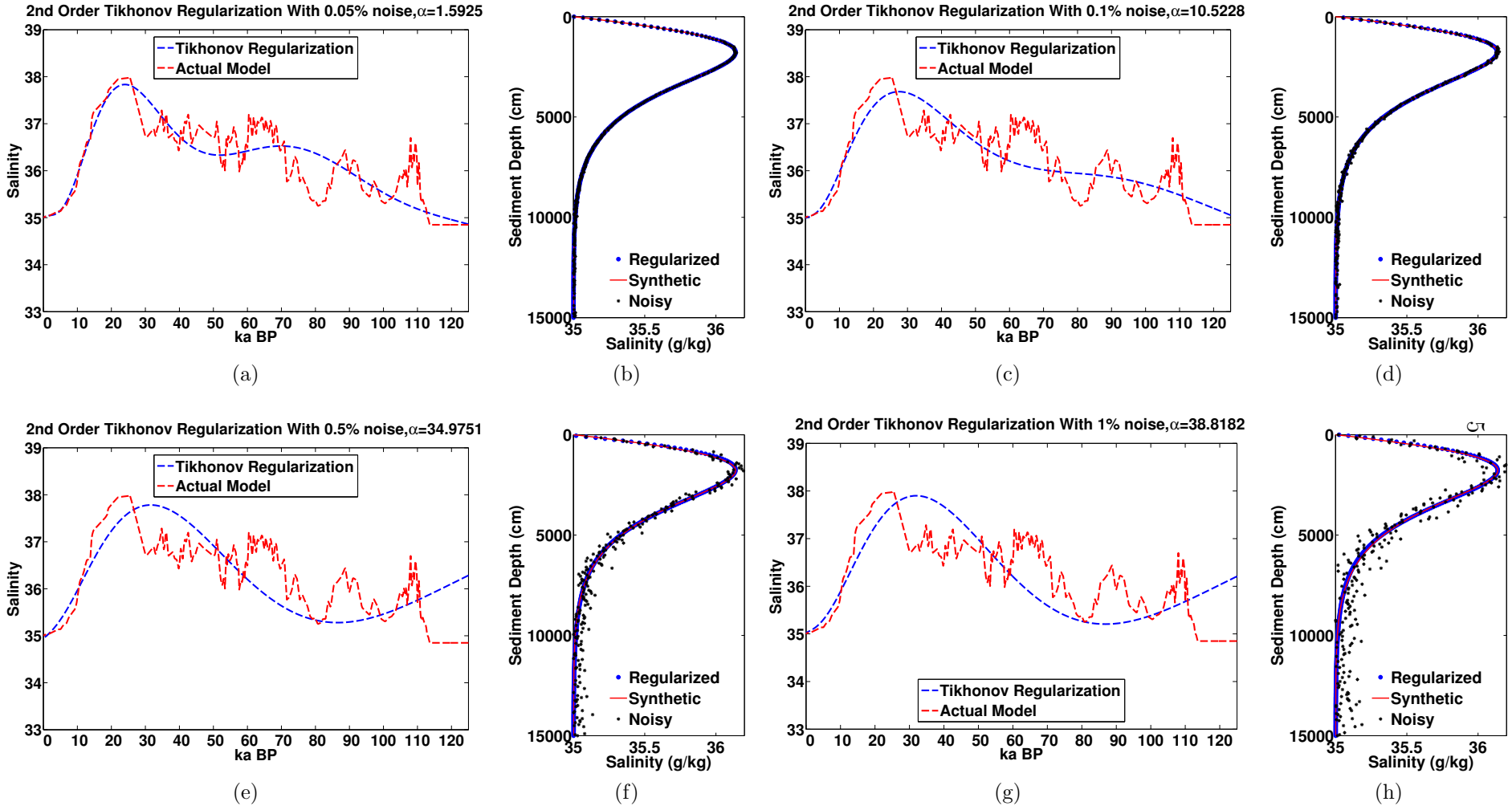


Figure 2.16: 2nd order regularization with noise, α chosen with discrepancy principle, $\mathbf{G}$ 301 x 626 (a) 0.05% noise (c) 0.1% noise (e) 0.5% noise (g) 1% noise.

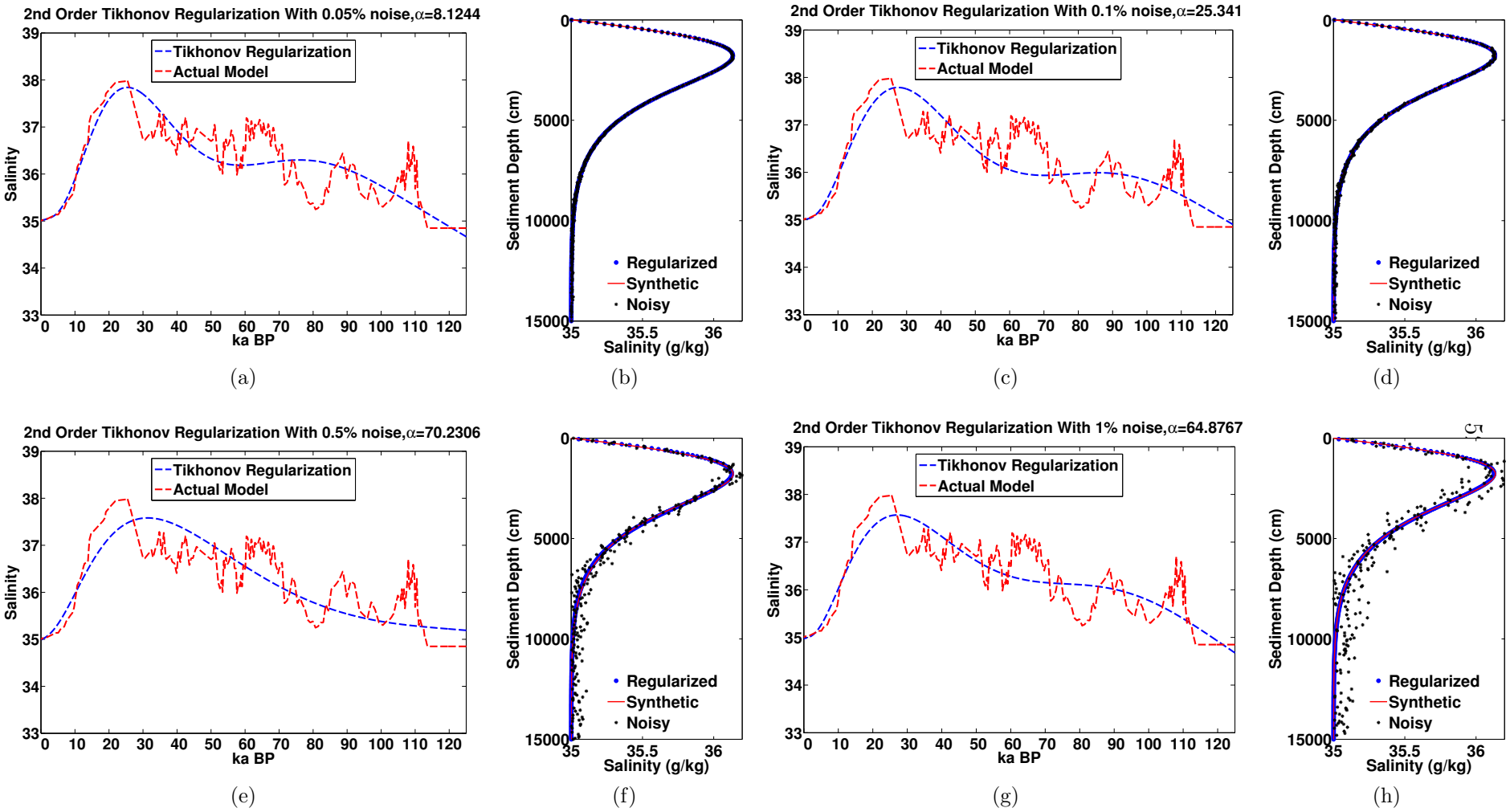
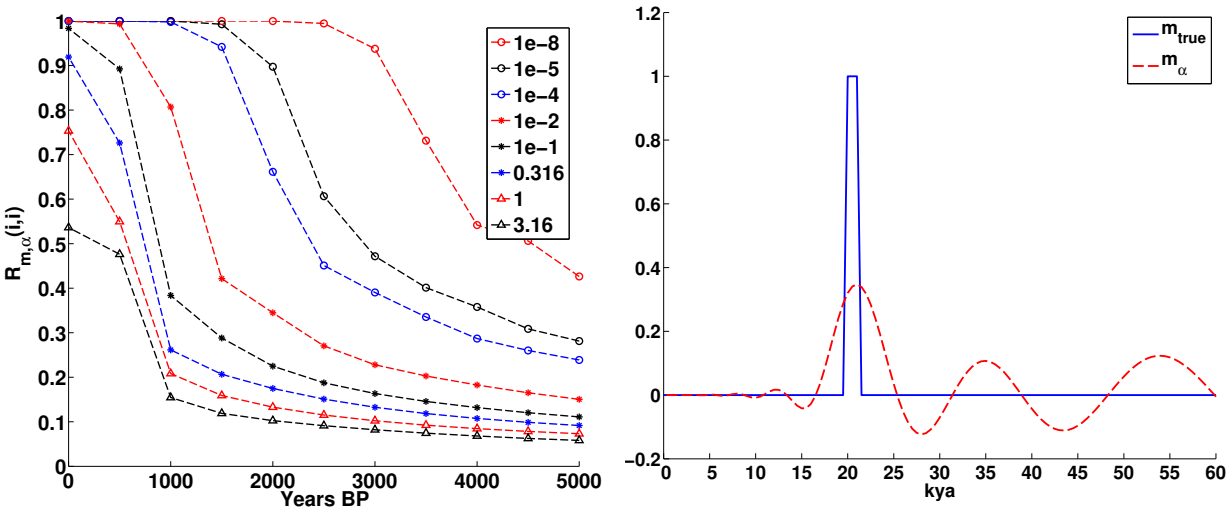


Figure 2.17: 2nd order regularization with noise, α chosen with discrepancy principle, $\mathbf{G}$ 301 x 1251. (a) 0.05% noise (c) 0.1% noise (e) 0.5% noise (g) 1% noise.



(a) (b)

Figure 2.18: 2nd order resolution matrix diagonals and LGM spike test, **G** 251 x 251. (a) resolution matrix diagonals as function of α (b) 2nd order regularization spike test, G 251 x 251, α=1e-9.

2.3.1.7 Variable damping

We are most interested in recovering information about ocean bottom water histories between the LGM and today, and we are willing to sacrifice our ability to recover the older parts of the time series. The spike tests illustrated that some of the poorly recovered information in the past is showing up as artificial oscillations in the present. To eliminate these oscillations with a uniform damping parameter, we must sacrifice resolution everywhere in the solution, and higher values of damping parameters cause more information to be smeared among modes.

Instead, we can vary α such that the poorly resolved modes in the inverse solution are damped more than the well resolved nodes. Following Culaciati (2013), we distinguish between well and poorly resolved nodes through the matrix $\mathbf{G}^T\mathbf{G}$. The relative magnitudes of each model vector element's contribution to the measured data profile is proportional to its corresponding diagonal element in $\mathbf{G}^T\mathbf{G}$. Similarly to Culaciati (2013) (the only difference is that we do not consider data covariance weights as all of our data covariances are equal), we construct a sensitivity damping matrix **S** by multiplying the inverse square root of the ith diagonal value of $\mathbf{G}^T\mathbf{G}$, normalized by the largest diagonal value, by the

ith row of the finite difference approximation to the second derivative $\mathbf{L}$ as described in Section 2.2.2.4, and solving the damped least squares problem:

$$\min \left|\left|\mathbf{Gm}-\mathbf{d}\right|\right|^2_2 + \alpha^2 \left|\left|\mathbf{Sm}\right|\right|^2_2 . \tag{2.36}$$

Note that the meaning of $\mathbf{S}$ in our notation differs from that in Culaciati (2013).

This method of regularization preferentially damps oscillations in the solution at the positions of the poorly resolved model parameters, in our case, those further back in time. The effect of using $\mathbf{S}$ in place of $\mathbf{L}$ in the regularized inversion is illustrated in Figure 2.19. We perform a set of spike tests at three different times using $\alpha = 1$, which is the lowest α that produced solutions satisfying the discrepancy principle in the examples shown in Figures 2.15-2.17. The upper row of panels in Figure 2.19 uses $\mathbf{L}$ as the damping matrix in the inverse problem while the lower row of panels shows the spike test using $\mathbf{S}$ in place of $\mathbf{L}$ as the damping matrix. The differences in these two sets of spike tests is subtle. In the 4 ka BP spike test, the use of $\mathbf{S}$ slightly increases the resolution of the inverse solution and damps some of the artificial oscillations in the model times further in the past. The 20.5 ka BP and 40 ka BP show similar magnitude smearing using either $\mathbf{L}$ or $\mathbf{S}$ as the damping matrix, however, the position of the maximum in the recovered solution is more closely centered on the true spike model's location.

The use of $\mathbf{S}$ in place of $\mathbf{L}$ generates a very subtle change in the resolution of the inverse solution because the ratio of maximum to minimum damping scaling encompassed in $\mathbf{S}$ is only $\sim$100. The damping parameter associated with 40 ka BP and 20.5 ka BP are both slightly less than 1, which explains the reduction in smearing relative to using a uniform α in both cases and also the fact that their resolution is little improved relative to the uniform α case. In contrast, the damping parameter associated with the 4 ka BP model element is $\sim$0.1, so it experiences 10 times less damping in its derivative than the model elements at 20.5 and 40 ka BP.

Comparing the spike tests at 4 ka BP in Figure 2.19 demonstrates clearly that a damping parameter 10 times smaller does not greatly increase a model element's resolution in the inverse solution. Figure 2.18a shows that it requires three orders of magnitude change

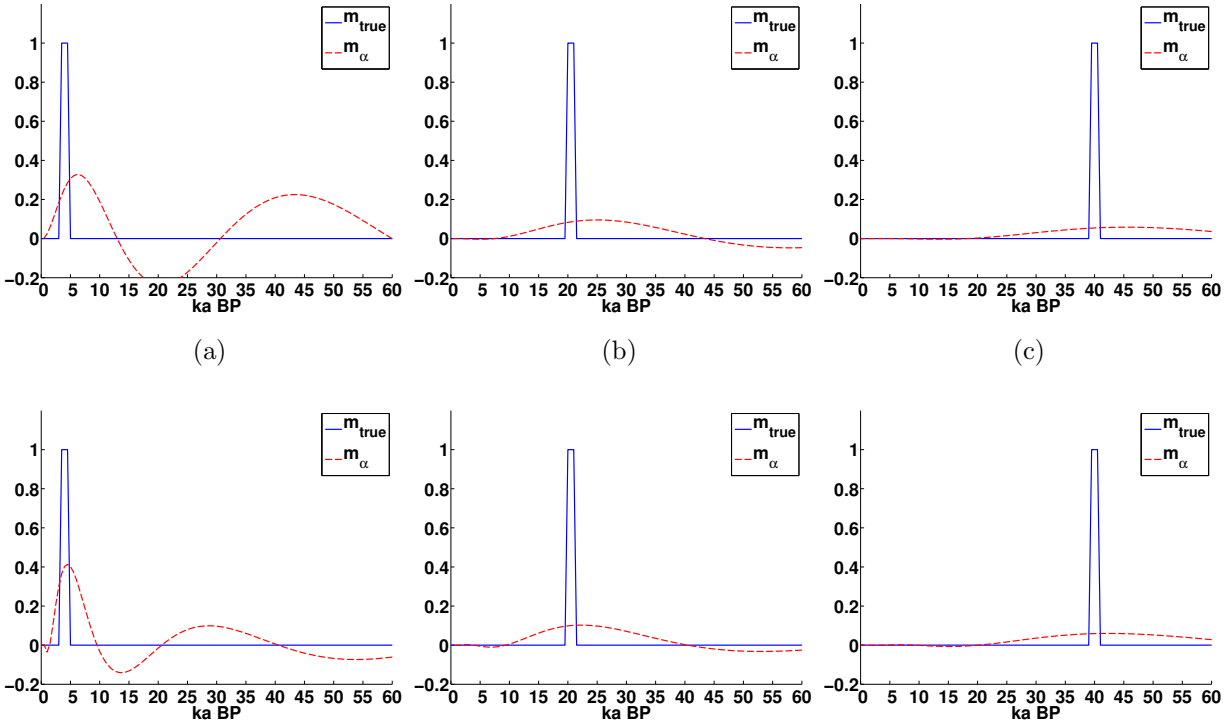


Figure 2.19: Spike tests comparing the skill of constant vs. variable damping through the sensitivity matrix technique. The first row, (a) - (c) use a constant damping parameter $\alpha = 1$ and the standard second-order Tikhonov regularization. The second row, (d) - (f) use α=1 and the variable sensitivity matrix $\mathbf{S}$ in place of the uniform $\mathbf{L}$.

in α to increase the resolution of the model element at year 2500 from 0.6 to 1. In the generalized inverse solution to the damped least squares problem, the values of $\mathbf{S}$ or $\mathbf{L}$ modify the generalized singular values and modes of the solution in a complex manner. The generalized singular values and generalized inverse represented by Equation 2.30 are derived from the generalized SVD of the extended matrix $\begin{bmatrix}\mathbf{G}\\ \mathbf{L}\end{bmatrix}$, or alternatively $\begin{bmatrix}\mathbf{G}\\ \mathbf{S}\end{bmatrix}$. We are in the process of deriving an analytical relationship between the resolution matrix of the inverse solution that uses the damping matrix $\mathbf{S}$ and the resolution matrix of the inverse solution using damping matrix $\mathbf{L}$, but this is complicated by the fact that there is no clear connection between the diagonal of $\mathbf{G}^T\mathbf{G}$ and the SVD of G.

2.3.2 The effect of the diffusion parameter

In ocean sediments the diffusion parameter D_0 is not well known, and spatially variable. In light of this, we consider the effect of varying diffusivity on our problem. We repeat the problem above with an order of magnitude larger and smaller value of D_0.

Figure 2.20 shows the zeroth order regularization for the same example with a diffusion parameter an order of magnitude higher. The regularization is much more unstable to noise because there is less signal in the data and hence a lower signal-to-noise ratio. In other words, the concentration profile in this case is a poor constraint on the boundary forcing inverse problem.

The second order regularization of the data generated with higher diffusivity, Figure 2.21 is similarly poor in skill, essentially only recovering the fact that salinity was larger at some point in the past.

With an order of magnitude smaller diffusion coefficient, $D_0 = 2.9e-7$ cm^2 s^{-1}, the regularized solutions, Figures 2.22, 2.23, behave similarly to the original case in which $D_0 = 2.9e-6$ cm^2 s^{-1}, even though the synthetic data profile's shape is much sharper.

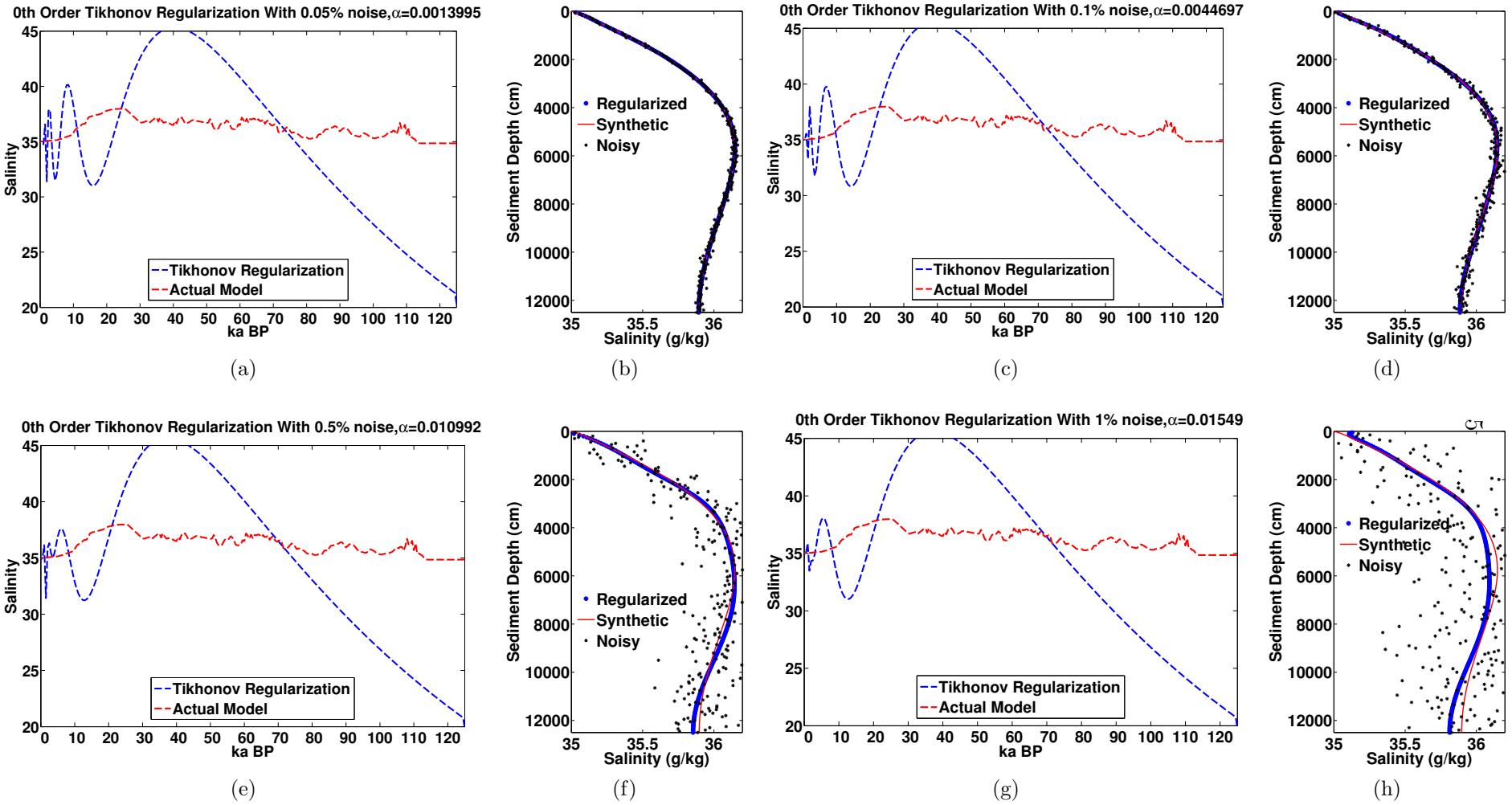


Figure 2.20: $D_0 = 2.9 \times 10^{-5}$ cm^2 s^{-1}, 0th order regularization with noise, **G** 251 x 251 (a) 0.05% noise (c) 0.1% noise (e) 0.5% noise (g) 1% noise.

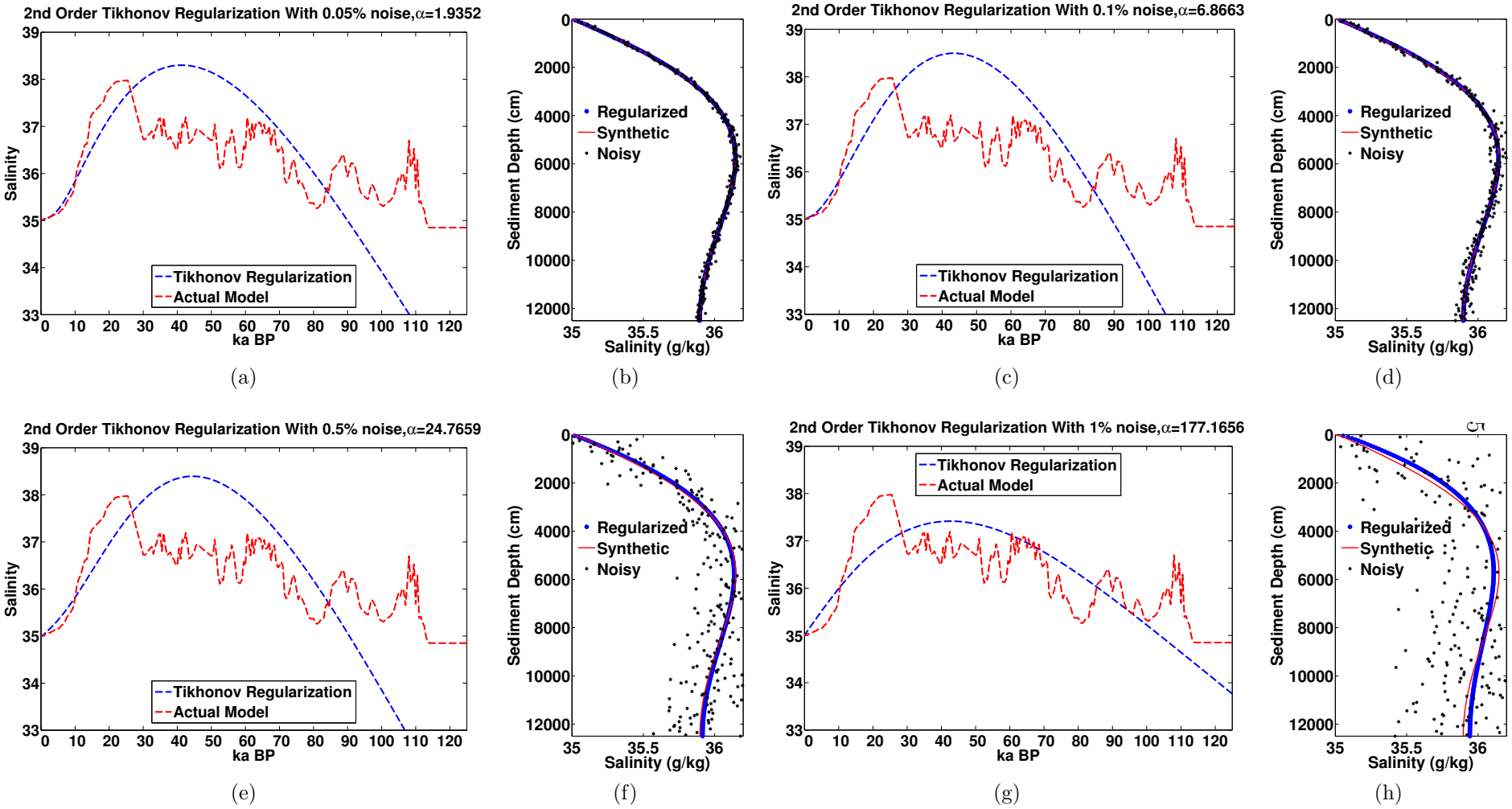


Figure 2.21: $D_0 = 2.9 \times 10^{-5}$ cm^2 s^{-1}, 2nd order regularization with noise, **G** 251 x 251 (a) 0.05% noise (c) 0.1% noise (e) 0.5% noise (g) 1% noise.

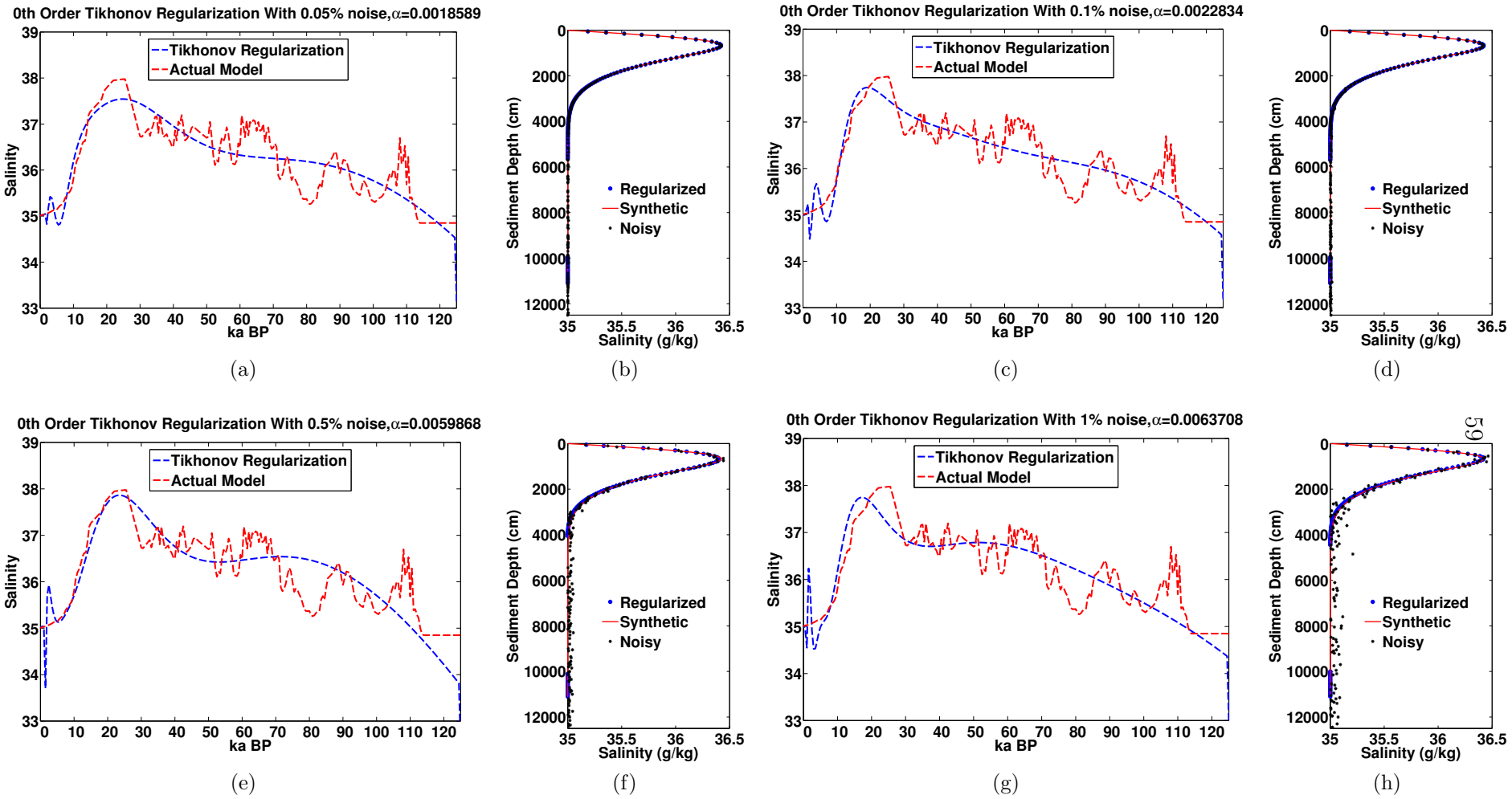


Figure 2.22: 0th order reg, $D_0 = 2.9 \times 10^{-7}$ cm^2 s^{-1} (a) 0.05% noise G 251x251 and discrep criterion (c) 0.1% noise (e) 0.5% noise (g) 1% noise.

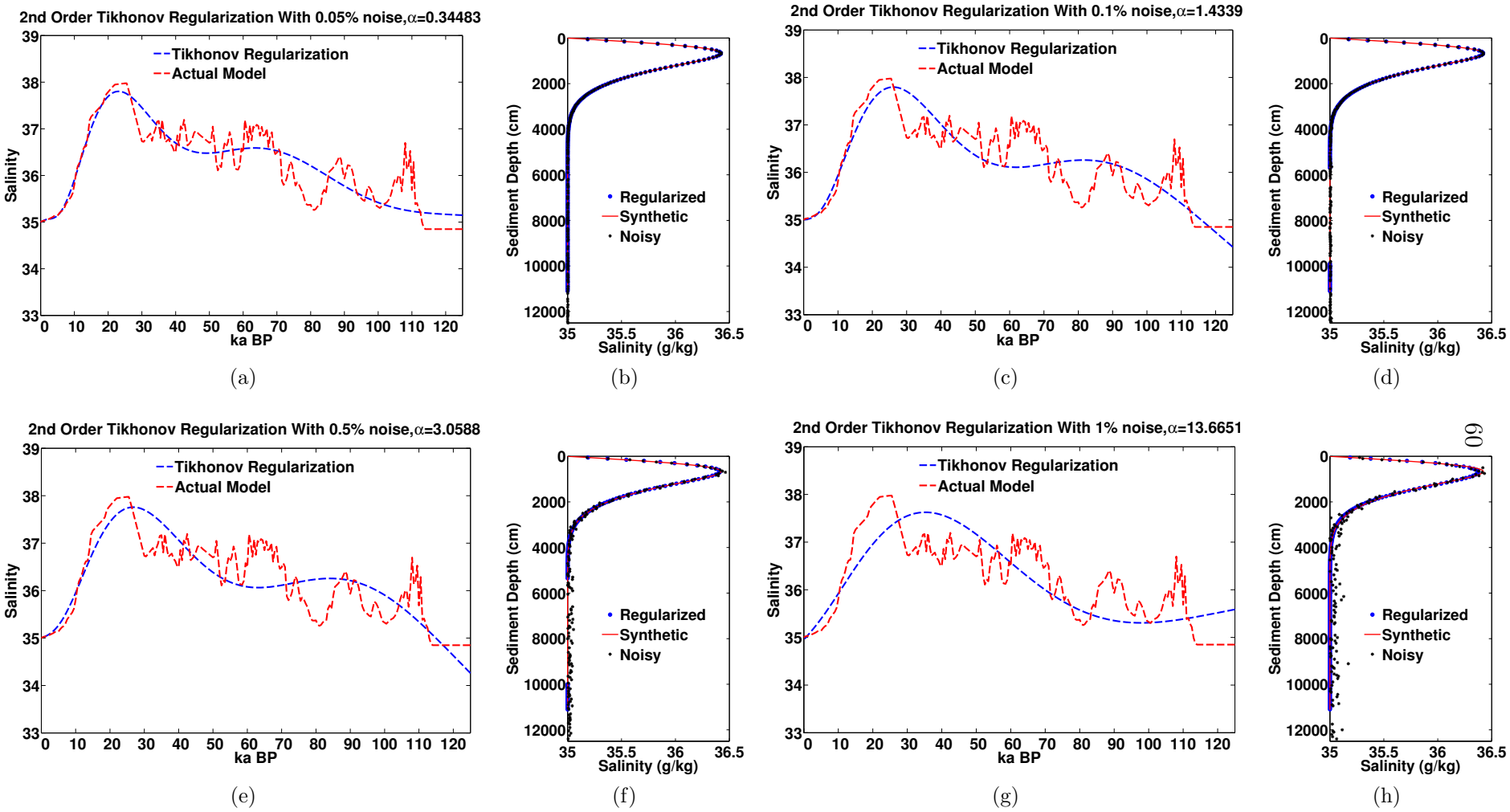


Figure 2.23: 2nd order reg, $D_0 = 2.9 \times 10^{-7}$ cm^2 s^{-1} (a) 0.05% noise G 251x251 and discrep criterion (c) 0.1% noise (e) 0.5% noise (g) 1% noise.

2.4 Discussion

The advantages of solving an ill-posed inverse problem via linear regularized least squares are the speed of solution and relative simplicity of the implementation. While we have considered a simplified version of our problem here, it illustrates clearly many of the general issues in extracting information from discrete ill-posed problems. By applying standard regularized least squares inverse techniques to recovering a synthetic model of bottom water salinity from a synthetic pore fluid profile, we are able to identify how ill-posed the problem is and evaluate the information we can gain from least squares tools. For our specific problem, we find that we can not recover much information about the past using a regularization technique.

Evaluation of $\mathbf{G}$, even without consideration of the generalized inverse, shows that there are very few well-resolved independent modes contained in the data, perhaps order $\mathcal{O}(10)$. Thus, regardless of the method we use to invert the data, there is a huge amount of information loss about the sediment-water interface boundary forcing history due to diffusion. We will not be able to recover information about high frequency variability in the bottom water history from the measured data.

In the presence of noise, none of the regularized least squares methods we have shown are capable of returning a satisfactory solution, that is, a solution close to the synthetic model we used. Satisfactory for us would be a reliable estimate of the LGM value and a time series between the LGM and the modern time that is close to the true solution. The zeroth order Tikhonov regularization suffers from introducing artificial oscillations into the near present solution, while the second order Tikhonov regularization generally oversmooths the solution such that neither the LGM magnitude nor position is recovered. The diffusion coefficient D_0 is likely to be closer to 1×10^{-5} than 1×10^{-6} cm^2 s^{-1}, but we see that values of D_0 near 1×10^{-5} cm^2 s^{-1} significantly reduce the skill of regularized least squares methods at recovering our synthetic model.

One major disadvantage of regularized least squares inverse methods is that it is difficult to quantify the error in the solution, which is why we did not compute the quantitative error between the true (synthetic) model and the inverse solutions. The various different

solutions we recovered using the same synthetic data illustrate the fact that there is no strong connection between the residual error, $||\mathbf{Gm} - \mathbf{d}||_2$ and the solution error; the optimized solution we recover using regularized least squares largely depends on the regularization scheme we use. The resolution matrix can help us estimate which model elements are well-resolved in the inverse solution, but it can not tell us how smearing affects the error of the recovered solution.

Using a damping parameter introduces bias into the inverse problem, such that the model we recover using damped least squares almost always underestimates the magnitude of the true solution. Additionally, minimizing $||\mathbf{m}||_2$ or $||\mathbf{Lm}||_2$ enforces an implicit prior expectation that our true model, or its second derivatives, are as close as possible to zero. Neither of these are good assumptions for the recovery of past ocean bottom water salinity or δ^{18}O, and both further reduce the magnitude of the solution returned. We can reframe the optimization problem such that we minimize a different quantity, such as $||\mathbf{m} - \mathbf{m}_p||_2$, where $\mathbf{m}_p$ is our prior guess of the correct solution. However, in the optimization framework, there is still no reliable way to estimate the error of an inverse least squares solution.

As the solutions recovered from a regularization will always be damped and biased, the regularized solution can not be used to validate or invalidate *ad hoc* techniques. That is, the damped least squares methods described here can not yield an improvement on the previous estimates of LGM temperature and salinity from Adkins et al. (2002).

In contrast, a Bayesian approach to regularized least squares, in which we assign an error estimate to the prior model $\mathbf{m}_p$, does return a quantitative error estimate on the regularized least squares solution. While the Bayesian framework solves some of the issues with error quantification, it does not eliminate the issue that least squares methods are sensitive to noise.

Finally, our true problem of interest is a nonlinear inverse problem, in that we wish to solve simultaneously for the diffusion coefficient D_0 and the bottom water time series of $[Cl^-]$ or δ^{18}O. While non-linear regularization techniques exist, they suffer from similar problems to linear regularizations in that the choice of damping parameters is not obvious

and they are sensitive to noise in the data.

2.5 Conclusions

Using synthetic examples, we have explored the ability of linear regularized least squares methods to estimate past deep ocean salinity and $\delta^{18}O$ from sediment pore fluid profiles of $[Cl^-]$ and $\delta^{18}O$. We show that regularized least squares methods are highly sensitive to noise in the data and to the diffusion coefficient in our problem. Of the regularization techniques we have explored, we have not discovered any that satisfactorily recover bottom water histories from data that resemble our measurements.

There are three major limitations to regularized least squares inverse methods. The main limitation is that damped least squares optimization techniques provide a single solution to a non-unique problem. In order to recover a solution, these techniques must minimize some constraint, which limits our view of the possible solutions that could have generated the data. Since we know that the solution is non-unique, we are interested in determining a range of solutions, rather than just one that minimizes a somewhat arbitrary constraint. The second major limitation is that these methods are very sensitive to noise in the data. Finally, the choice of damping parameter is quite arbitrary. Together these limitations make it practically impossible to assign an error bound on an inverse solution.

With these considerations in mind, we conclude that regularized least squares techniques are not the ideal way estimate past ocean bottom water time series from pore fluid profiles. As an alternative we turn to a Bayesian Markov Chain Monte Carlo (MCMC) parameter estimation method in Chapter 3.

Chapter 3

What is the information content of pore fluid $\delta^{18}O$ and [Cl^-]?

3.1 Introduction

We demonstrate in Chapter 2 that regularized inversions recover minimal information about ocean bottom water histories from sediment pore fluid profiles of $\delta^{18}O$ and [Cl^-]. Although some of the difficulty in estimating bottom water histories from pore fluid profiles stems from the ill-posed nature of the inverse problem, damped least squares techniques also inject bias into inversions, masking the information about the past that *is* retained in the pore fluid profiles. Figure 3.1 shows the measured $\delta^{18}O$ and [Cl^-] (converted to salinity) profiles at deep ocean sites where we have measured both quantities in the pore fluids. There is a clear local maximum in both $\delta^{18}O$ and salinity several tens of meters below the sediment-water interface, which, knowing that diffusion in these sediments is on the order of 10^{-5} cm^2 s^{-1}, hints at the influence of the LGM. At the LGM, the ocean sea level was ~130 meters lower than it is today, but the mass balance of salt and oxygen isotopes entering and leaving the ocean remained the same. Thus, the mean ocean salinity and $\delta^{18}O$ must have been greater. Any local variability in $\delta^{18}O$ and [Cl^-] with respect to the mean change in the past that we can infer from the pore fluid profiles gives us information about the distribution of ocean $\delta^{18}O$, salinity, temperature and density.

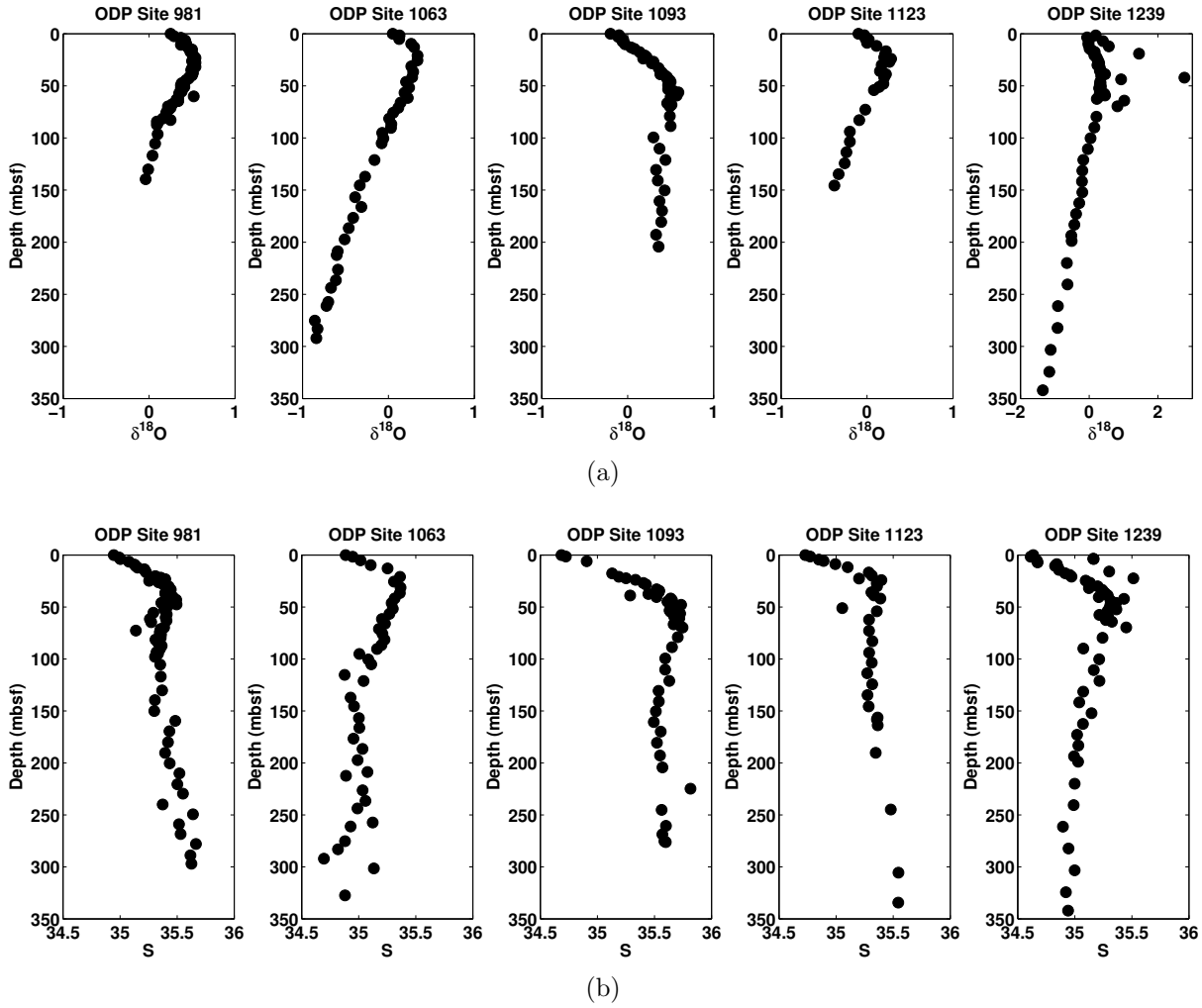


Figure 3.1: Measured profiles of (a) δ^{18}O and (b) salinity (converted from the measured [Cl^-] values). Note that the x-axis for ODP Site 1239 in (a) has a wider range than the others. The values in all of the measured data profiles increase towards a local maximum several tens of meters below the sea floor.

As an illustration of the potential for pore fluid δ^{18}O and [Cl^-] profiles to tell us about strikingly different past bottom water conditions, we plot the maximum change in δ^{18}O vs maximum change in [Cl^-] in the upper 100 meters below sea floor at sites where we have sediment depth profiles of both in Figure 3.2. For reference, the geographical locations of these sites are overlaid on their modern bottom water salinity in Figure 3.3. We see that the maximum measured values cluster around a different mean than the modern sediment-water interface values, and that the ordering of the maximum values is spatially distinct from that of the modern values. For example, 1093 and 1239 are the lowest salinity points in the modern, but their maximum salinity values in the pore fluids are higher than those at the other sites. The difference between the modern and maximum pore fluid δ^{18}O on

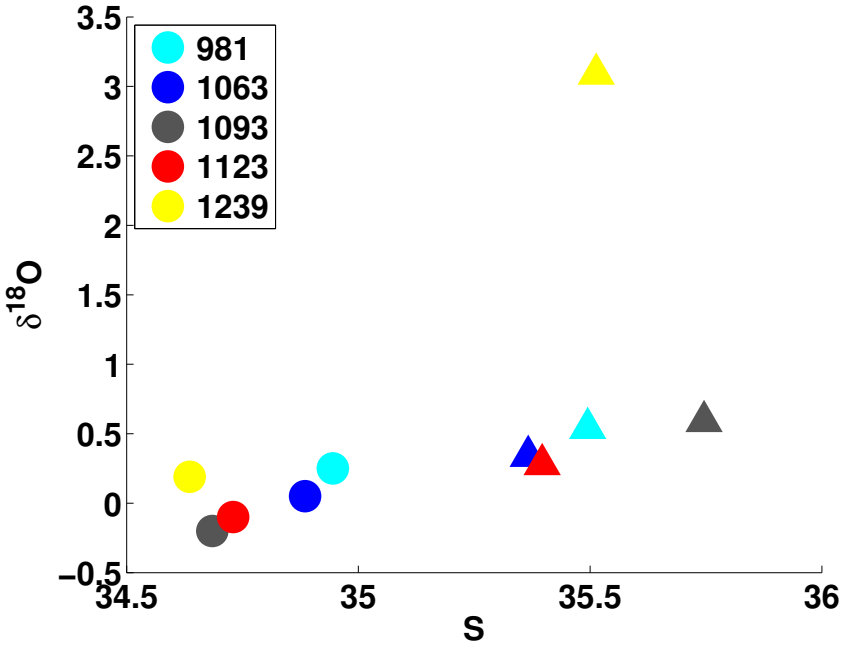


Figure 3.2: Information in the measured δ^{18}O and [Cl$^-$] (shown converted to equivalent salinity). Circles represent the modern sediment-water interface value, while triangles are the maximum value measured in the pore fluids between 0 and 100 mbsf.

average is smaller in magnitude than the difference between the modern and maximum pore fluid salinity. While we can not interpret these differences without considering the temporal evolution of the pore fluid profiles, there is a strong suggestion from the data alone that ocean bottom waters were distributed differently in the past.

We recognize there are many possible bottom water histories that could have generated our measured data; the inverse problem is non-unique. However, we also know that some of the mathematically acceptable histories are physically implausible or impossible. Therefore we seek to discover the full distribution of physically acceptable bottom water time series that could have generated our measured data. We would like to know whether this distribution of solutions is wide or narrow and whether the distribution can be described simply, for example as a multi-dimensional Gaussian, or if it has multiple sharp peaks and valleys in any given dimension. Our intuition tells us that the distribution of time series will depend on the diffusion coefficient we assign in our model. Thus, in addition to being non-unique, our inverse problem is nonlinear.

Here we evaluate the ability of a Bayesian Markov Chain Monte Carlo (MCMC) method

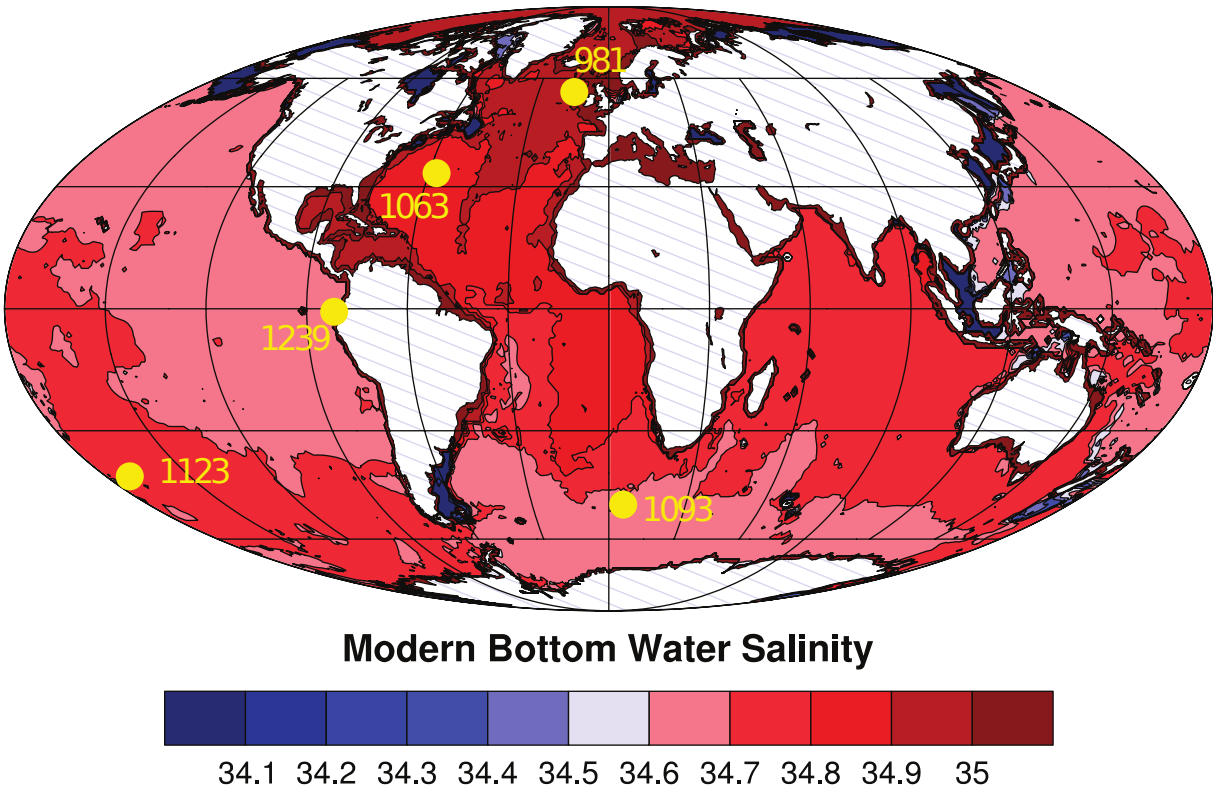


Figure 3.3: Locations of the ODP sites where we have pore fluid profile measurements of $\delta^{18}O$ and $[Cl^-]$ overlain on the modern ocean bottom water salinity. Note that the range of modern ocean bottom water salinity is quite narrow.

to reconstruct bottom water histories from pore fluid profiles of $\delta^{18}O$ and $[Cl^-]$. We simultaneously recover initial conditions and the diffusion coefficient D_0. A Bayesian approach allows us to explicitly include our prior information and uncertainty in the inverse problem and recover a distribution of models with varying probability. Markov Chain Monte Carlo methods allow us to consider the fully nonlinear problem and are robust to local minima and maxima. Our work relies on the use of an algorithm named Cascading Adaptive Tempering Metropolis in Parallel (CATMIP, Minson et al. (2013)).

We first describe the general methodological approach to the forward problem which has many overlaps with the synthetic example in Chapter 2 and explain how we encapsulate our knowledge about the deep ocean as probability distributions that can be supplied to a numerical Bayesian MCMC sampler. We then illustrate the similarities and differences between regularized inverse methods and the Bayesian MCMC approach with synthetic examples. Finally we apply the technique to $\delta^{18}O$ and $[Cl^-]$ data from sediment pore fluids at five Ocean Drilling Program (ODP) sites, 981, 1063, 1093, 1123 and 1239, and

identify the robust and non-robust quantities that can be recovered from this data set.

For clarity in the text we often refer to $[Cl^-]$ as salinity or S, using the conversion factor $S = \frac{19.354}{35}[Cl^-]$ g kg^{-1}, however all of the data measurements are derived from pore fluid $[Cl^-]$. In our synthetic examples we consider the evolution of salinity, but as $\delta^{18}O$ and S are both conservative tracers away from the surface of the ocean and in the sediments, our conclusions apply equally to the reconstruction of both $\delta^{18}O$ and S, as well as other conservative tracers.

3.2 Methods

3.2.1 Forward model

We assume that $[Cl^-]$ and $\delta^{18}O$ are chemically inert and that there are no horizontal gradients in the sediment and ocean properties. This allows us to represent the time evolution of each individual tracer, c, with a one-dimensional advection-diffusion equation:

$$\frac{\partial(\phi c)}{\partial t} = D_0 \frac{\partial}{\partial z}\left(\frac{\phi}{\theta^2}\frac{\partial c}{\partial z}\right) - \frac{\partial(u\phi c)}{\partial z}. \tag{3.1}$$

ϕ is the sediment porosity, θ is the sediment tortuosity, and D_0 is the diffusivity in water of the chemical species of interest. D_0 is a function of temperature and ionic strength, but we take it as an unknown constant in order the reduce the dimensionality of our inverse problem. If we make a conservative estimate that the temperature gradient in the sediments is 100°C/km, the bottom of our cores will have felt temperatures up to 35°C. Li and Gregory (1974) estimate that there is roughly a factor of two ratio between the diffusion coefficient for $[Cl^-]$ at 35°C and that at 0°C. Since we do not include the temperature gradient dependence of the diffusion coefficient, we will underestimate the effect of the bottom boundary condition and lower part of the sediment pore fluid values on controlling the inverse solution. In general we find that including the temperature gradient does not qualitatively affect the fit of an inverse model's output to the data. u is the vertical velocity of the water with respect to the sediment, which is predominantly due

to sediment compaction. z is the depth in the sediment, defined increasing downwards. Assuming bulk steady-state compaction simplifies this equation to

$$\phi \frac{\partial c}{\partial t} = \left(\frac{\partial D^*}{\partial z} - \phi u \right) \frac{\partial c}{\partial z} + D^* \frac{\partial^2 c}{\partial z^2} , \tag{3.2}$$

where $D^* = D_0 \frac{\phi}{\theta^2}$. A typical model for θ^2 is $\theta^2 = \phi f$ where f is the non-dimensional formation factor:

$$f = \frac{\text{bulk sediment specific electrical resistivity}}{\text{porewater resistivity}} . \tag{3.3}$$

Laboratory measurements suggest that a good approximation for f is ϕ^{-n}, where n averages 1.8 over various sediments Berner (1980). Our final equation describing concentration evolution with time and space is

$$\frac{\partial c}{\partial t} = \left(1.8 \ \phi^{0.8} D_0 \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial z} - u \right) \frac{\partial c}{\partial z} + \phi^{1.8} D_0 \frac{\partial^2 c}{\partial z^2} . \tag{3.4}$$

ϕ in our model is a smoothed version of the measured porosity in each core. With the steady-state compaction assumption, u is derived from the sedimentation rate and porosity data as described in Chapter 2. The concentration profiles at any given time result from Equation 3.4, an initial condition and two boundary conditions. The top (ocean–sediment interface) boundary condition is the tracer time evolution in the water overlying the core site that we seek to constrain. At the bottom boundary we assign a gradient boundary condition. Equation 3.4 is a stiff partial differential equation, so we solve it with a second order Implicit-Explicit (IMEX) method for its solution. The advection terms are solved explicitly while the diffusion terms are solved implicitly (Ascher et al., 1995). The time step in the solver is 10 years and the spatial resolution is 50 cm. The total integration time is 125,000 years.

3.2.2 The inverse problem

With typical values of D_0, ϕ and u, the solution to Equation 3.4 is heavily diffusion dominated (Peclet O($1e^{-3}$)), and a classic example of an ill-posed problem. The same concentration profile at a given time can be produced by an infinite number of forcing conditions. It is not possible to directly invert the measured concentration profile and recover a unique concentration forcing history. However, many of these infinite mathematically feasible solutions are non-physical. For example, a species concentration can not be negative. Using a Bayesian approach, we can restrict the solution space by applying our prior knowledge of the problem. Bayes' theorem states that:

$$P(\mathbf{\Theta}|\mathbf{D}) \propto P(\mathbf{D}|\mathbf{\Theta})\, P(\mathbf{\Theta}) \ , \tag{3.5}$$

where $\mathbf{\Theta}$ is a vector of model parameters and $\mathbf{D}$ is the measured data. In words, the probability that a given model/set of model parameters produced the measured data is proportional to the product of the prior probability of those parameters and the likelihood of the data produced using those model parameters. $P(\mathbf{\Theta})$ is known as the prior probability, and encompasses our knowledge of the model parameters independent of the data measurements $\mathbf{D}$. $P(\mathbf{D}|\mathbf{\Theta})$ is the likelihood, computed using the error between the measured data and data produced by the forward model using a given set of model parameters $\mathbf{\Phi}$. $P(\mathbf{\Theta}|\mathbf{D})$ is the posterior probability distribution, or posterior. Bayesian Markov Chain Monte Carlo (Bayesian MCMC) sampling provides us with a probability distribution proportional to the posterior probability distribution of possible model parameters.

3.2.2.1 Bayesian Markov Chain Monte Carlo sampling

The brute force way to solve this problem is to choose a large range of possible values of model parameters and perform an integral over all of them to find the probability of any given parameter. In high-dimensional problems, computing this integral is intractable. We take a Markov Chain Monte Carlo approach to the integral that instead samples the Bayesian posterior. A variety of approaches have been proposed for this. We use

an algorithm called Cascading Adaptive Tempering Metropolis In Parallel (CATMIP) (Minson et al., 2013), which has been demonstrated to behave very efficiently for high-dimensional problems. CATMIP is initialized with the prior probability distribution and evolves from the prior to the posterior in a series of tempering or cooling steps. At each cooling step a new probability distribution is proposed and the change between distributions from step to step is monitored to track the evolution. For a given set of proposed parameters, the likelihood is computed by integrating the forward model with those parameters and computing a misfit cost function between the model output and the measured data. Unless otherwise specified, all of the cases described here use a chain length of 1000 steps and 1000 chains.

3.2.2.2 Model parameterization

Our problem has many unknowns: the top and bottom boundary condition time series, the initial condition, and the diffusion coefficient D_0. We are primarily interested in recovering the top boundary condition, the time series of $[Cl^-]$ or $\delta^{18}O$ in the water, but its solution is not independent of that of the other unknowns. This dependence requires that we must solve for all of the unknowns simultaneously, which results in a very high-dimensional problem. Also, since one of our unknowns is D_0, the inversion is non-linear. To make the solution tractable we make simplifying assumptions. These assumptions can be thought of as part of our prior or choice of model, although we do not formally evaluate the probability distribution associated with the model choice. We expect that the bottom boundary condition is not changing rapidly with time, and we assign a constant in time bottom boundary gradient to each site. The solution is very sensitive to D_0, so we seek to recover the time series of bottom water concentrations that is our top boundary condition simultaneously to the coefficient D_0. The time series is parameterized as a set of concentrations at fixed time points spaced 2000 years apart near the present-day with increasing resolution further back in time. Our choice of time points reflects our understanding that, at low sedimentation rate sites such as those we consider, the resolution of any paleorecord will not be greater than a few thousand years due to bioturbation at the sediment–water interface. The diffusion-dominated information in the

pore fluids will be lower resolution than the information recorded in the solid state. In order to not degrade the accuracy of the finite difference solution, we linearly interpolate between the fixed time point parameters to create the input to the forward model.

3.2.2.3 Cost function

We assume our error is exponentially distributed to compute the likelihood function

$$P\left(\mathbf{D}|\mathbf{\Theta}\right) \propto e^{-1/2(\mathbf{d}_m-\mathbf{d}_{obs})^T\mathbf{C}_D^{-1}(\mathbf{d}_m-\mathbf{d}_{obs})} \tag{3.6}$$

The data covariance matrix $\mathbf{C}_D$ is diagonal, under the assumption that the errors of individual measurements are independent. $\mathbf{d}_m$ is the data produced by the forward model, given the model parameters $\mathbf{\Theta}$, while $\mathbf{d}_{obs}$ is the observed (measured) data.

We use an exponential error assumption rather than a Gaussian error assumption in order to reduce the effect of extreme data outliers on our solutions. Pore fluids are flame-sealed into glass vials on retrieval, and if extreme care is not taken in this process, a sample can partially evaporate, changing its δ^{18}O and [Cl^-] concentration. Alternatively, a vial may appear to be sealed but is not, such that it partially evaporates during the time in transport from the sampling site to the laboratory. Errors in handling that lead to evaporation can go unnoticed but later appear as scatter far outside our typical measurement error. We generally can not quantify the error associated with these seeming outliers. The exponential error assumption allows us to assign our typical measurement standard deviation to the data covariance matrix diagonal while still being robust to handling error which can not be quantified.

3.2.3 Choice of priors

The posterior solution to our problem is highly sensitive to our choice of prior. This sensitivity implies that if we could improve our prior confidence we could improve our confidence in the solutions. We have high confidence in some of our prior assumptions,

such as our estimate of the mean sea level in the past. Other prior information necessary to the problem is more difficult to choose. We show the results with different, reasonable priors and discuss the implications of each one to water mass histories, as well as the biases induced by the given prior.

We choose Gaussian distributions for our prior probabilities of the salinity or δ^{18}O at any point in time. Recall that we have parameterized the boundary condition in our problem as a set of nodes; each node represents the value of salinity or δ^{18}O at a given time. We assign a prior mean and standard deviation to each node. The standard deviation represents the expected spread of ocean salinities or δ^{18}O values around the mean at that time. In order to enforce smoothness of our solutions, we further impose covariance between the node values. For the boundary condition forcing, the prior probability is a multidimensional Gaussian that can be written as a covariance matrix.

3.2.3.1 Prior information from sea level records

There is little information about past deep ocean salinity from paleo proxies. However, we do have confidence in sea level reconstructions. Assuming the major ion quantities are conservative over our time period of interest, the mean ocean salinity is determined by the amount of water in the oceans, that is, the sea level. We treat the ocean as a rectangular basin that is 3800 m deep today so that the concentrations scale directly to changes in sea level:

$$S_t = S_{mod} + \frac{h_t - h_{mod}}{h_{LGM} - h_{mod}} \left(S_{LGM} - S_{mod}\right) . \tag{3.7}$$

Here t denotes the time (in the past), mod indicates the modern mean ocean value, and h is the absolute mean sea level height. We take the modern mean ocean salinity to be 34.68 and the LGM mean ocean salinity as $\mathrm{S}_{LGM} = \mathrm{h}_{mod}\mathrm{S}_{mod}/\mathrm{h}_{LGM} = 35.9$.

There have been many attempts to estimate the past contribution of $\delta^{18}\mathrm{O}|_w$ to the $\delta^{18}\mathrm{O}|_c$ of benthic foraminifera at the LGM (e.g. Emiliani, 1966, Shackleton, 1967, Dansgaard and Tauber, 1969, Chappell and Shackleton, 1986, Fairbanks, 1989, Mix, 1987, Schrag et al.,

1996). Most estimates rely on estimates of the total continental ice and size of the polar ice sheets on the planet. Conversion from total ice mass to the mean $\delta^{18}O_w$ of the ocean requires assuming a $\delta^{18}O$ of the glacial ice in different locations, and thus it is difficult to quantify the errors associated with these estimates. Typically the authors of these studies provide conservative bounds by testing extreme hypotheses. Schrag et al. (1996) combined pore fluid measurements with hypothetical bottom water boundary conditions to provide constraints on both local and mean ocean $\delta^{18}O$. Since we are re-evaluating the pore fluid constraints, we can not use these estimates for our problem. Duplessy et al. (2002) reviews some of the traditional ice mass based estimates of the $\delta^{18}O$ and suggests a new constraint for the lower bound of ocean mean $\delta^{18}O|_w$ of 0.85‰ based on the freezing point of seawater. They suggest an upper bound constrained by pore fluid data of 1.25‰. Their upper bound based on ice mass approximations is 1.47‰. We take the best guess of the LGM mean ocean $\delta^{18}O$ to be the midpoint of the Duplessy et al. (2002) bounds, 1.16‰. The equation for $\delta^{18}O$ as a function of time (sea level) is similar to that of S, where we assign modern mean $\delta^{18}O = 0$.

For the sea level curve we have created a new compilation from previously published values. The values are included in Table 3.1 with their source for reference. Figure 3.4 shows the compiled values overlain by the selected values we use for our parameter positions. Where the time of our parameter node does not correspond to a measured value, we take a linear interpolation between the nearest points.

3.2.3.2 Prior information from modern ocean property spreads

At each time node, the prior assigned for both salinity and $\delta^{18}O$ are Gaussians with mean determined by the sea level. Today, the mean ocean value is a good approximation for the deep ocean, due to the deep ocean's volume contribution to the mean.

The past salinity and $\delta^{18}O$ spread around the mean is unknown. Lacking other information, we might guess that the past spread in $\delta^{18}O$ and salinity around the mean is the same as the modern spread. From the World Ocean Atlas 2009 (Antonov et al., 2010) and the GISS database (LeGrande and Schmidt, 2006) we plot the histograms of salinity and

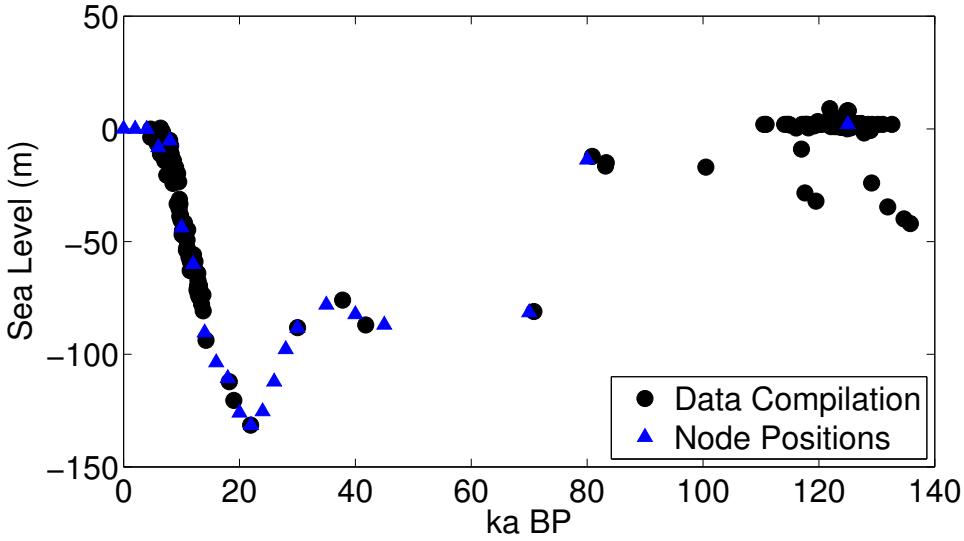


Figure 3.4: Reconstructions of past sea level relative to present (black circles) and the points we use for sea level in computing the prior mean salinity and δ^{18}O (blue triangles)

δ^{18}O for all points deeper than 2000 m in Figure 3.5. Note that today these are not simple Gaussians; at best they could be described as a mixture of Gaussians. In particular the Atlantic and Pacific can be identified in the salinity histogram as unique water masses. We fit a Gaussian pdf envelope around each histogram, as shown in the blue curves in Figure 3.5, to estimate the modern mean and spread around the mean. Applying this method gives a modern deep ocean $\sigma_S = 0.12$ g kg^{-1} and $\sigma_{\delta^{18}\mathrm{O}} = 0.25$‰. In addition to the possible spread of deep ocean property values, the prior variances must also account for error in the sea level curve. We choose an error of 10 m at the LGM. Propagation of 10 m error through the scaling for sea level gives an error of 0.098 g kg^{-1} in salinity. The LGM δ^{18}O error is not directly related to the sea level, but Duplessy et al. (2002) suggest an error on their estimate for mean $\delta^{18}\mathrm{O}_w$ should be 0.2‰. Summing together the modern spread and the error yields $\sigma_S = 0.218$ or a variance $\sigma_S^2 = 0.05$. $\sigma_{\delta^{18}\mathrm{O}}$=0.45 and $\sigma^2_{\delta^{18}\mathrm{O}}$=0.20‰.

Today the covariance between δ^{18}O and S varies by water mass/basin. Our choice of definition of the prior means induces an implicit prior covariance between the mean δ^{18}O and S that is constant in time and space, although we expect that it varies with time and location in the ocean. The solution for δ^{18}O and salinity at a given site are, however, entirely separate, allowing any combination of the two to arise in the posterior distributions.

To represent the fact that neighboring points in a time series at a given location are not independent, since the evolution of δ^{18}O and salinity at deep ocean sites is dominated by eddy diffusion, we assign covariances to the points in the time series. The covariances are chosen to have the form:

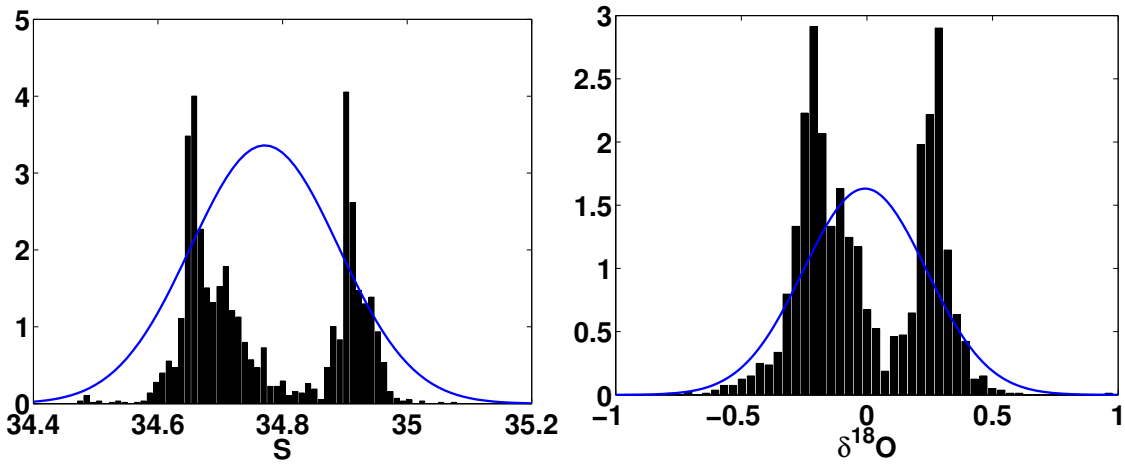
$$\sigma_{ij} = \sigma_{ii}^2 e^{-\frac{\left(t_i - t_j\right)^2}{2T^2}}, \tag{3.8}$$

where T is a timescale of covariance. When $t_i - t_j = T$, the correlation between the time series values at those times is $\sim$0.6, while if $t_i - t_j = 2T$, the correlation between the values is $\sim$0.1. T is roughly half of an ocean site's memory of its previous value, which is a somewhat ambiguous concept physically.

T is set by ocean mixing, which is spatially variable and depends at least in part on the global distribution of temperature and salinity through its dependence on the slope of isopycnals. Much of the information in T is encapsulated in the ever-elusive eddy diffusivity parameter, κ. T and κ are related in a scaling argument sense through a length-scale L, that is,

$$2T = \frac{L^2}{\kappa}, \tag{3.9}$$

where we have written 2T to represent the amount of time it would take for an ocean site to completely forget its previous value. κ is a spatially variable tensor quantity, with



(a) (b)

Figure 3.5: (a) Modern S below 2000m, GISS database accessed 9/12/2012, excluding the Mediterranean Sea. Blue curve is Gaussian distribution with standard deviation used for priors (b) modern δ^{18}O below 2000m

unique values both across isopycnals and in both the x and y directions along isopycnals. While there is an ongoing debate about the absolute values of κ, the current best estimates for deep ocean along-isopycnal κ, primarily using inverse methods on climatologies, are $\mathcal{O}$ (100 m^2 s^{-1}) (Zika et al., 2009, 2010). Diapycnal values are not significant for the local balance as they are at maximum $\mathcal{O}$ (1×10^{-4}) (Ledwell et al., 1993, Kunze et al., 2006). The proper value of L is closely related to the question of how the ocean overturning is set. For deep ocean sites that feel the influence of spatially homogeneous deep water masses, we expect the minimum L to be at least half a basin length, or half the Atlantic basin length: roughly 8000 km. With these values for L and κ, T would be $\sim$10,000 years.

Our scaling argument assumes a steady state ocean circulation and ignores temporal variation in ocean circulation. δ^{13}C and δ^{18}O records in the ocean sediments indicate that the ocean does not remain in steady state over 10,000 years. In the absence of a strong contribution from geothermal heat, the primary forcing to the ocean circulation occurs at the surface. T may also represent the time for a site in the ocean to reach a new steady state in response to perturbations at the surface. Using radiocarbon ages as rough estimates of the reservoir age of the deep ocean, many have concluded that the ocean can reach a new steady state after 2000 years (Duplessy et al., 1991, Skinner and Shackleton, 2005), implying that T = 1000 years. However, Wunsch and Heimbach (2008) demonstrate that radiocarbon ages can be misleading, and it may take the ocean up to 10,000 years to reach a new equilibrium or for a specific site to forget its past value depending on where a regional surface forcing is applied. In our framework this is equivalent to T = 5000 years or more. The only location which deviates from this rule is the high latitude North Atlantic, which may require only a few hundred years to locally equilibrate to a local change in forcing, as a significant component of deep waters there result from rapid deep convection (McCartney and Talley, 1984, Dickson and Brown, 1994).

3.2.3.3 Accounting for different-than-modern past ocean property spreads

Adkins et al. (2002) suggested that the spread in deep ocean salinities at the LGM was larger than it is today. While the error bounds on Adkins et al. (2002)'s estimate were

not well-defined, their solutions did provide acceptable fits to the pore fluid concentration data profiles. Thus, whether or not Adkins et al. (2002)'s estimates are the **most** likely, we want them to be allowable. In this way we can better compare the differences in our solutions and methodologies. It is possible that the ocean had a wider salinity spread in the past, but we do not have any a priori information on what the magnitude of the spread was.

In general, Bayesian MCMC methods allow us to shrink but not expand the prior. That is, the posterior on a given parameter may be more narrow than the prior, but it can never be wider. For a Gaussian prior we are unlikely to recover solutions more than two standard deviations from the mean of the prior. So, to allow for the possibility of the LGM salinities estimated by Adkins et al. (2002), we consider the sensitivity of our solution to wider-than-modern prior variances, up to two orders of magnitude larger than the modern spread.

3.2.3.4 Diffusion coefficient prior

The prior we assign to the diffusion coefficient, D_0, is log-normal. We choose this prior because D_0 is what is known as a Jeffreys parameter (Tarantola, 2005). Jeffreys parameters are positive but invariant under scale transformations: physical parameters that are greater than zero but could vary by orders of magnitude. In the case of diffusion, laboratory studies find diffusion coefficients for chloride between 1-20 $\times 10^{-6}$ cm^2 s^{-1}, varying as a function of temperature, pressure, and ionic content (constraints imposed by electroneutrality) (Li and Gregory, 1974). The diffusivity of δ^{18}O represents the relative diffusion of water oxygen isotopes, which will mirror the diffusion of $H_2^{18}O$ in water, $\mathcal{O}(1 \times 10^{-5})$ cm^2 s^{-1}, also a function of temperature (Wang et al., 1953). As shown in Figure 3.6, we choose a mean diffusion coefficient of 50.5 $\times 10^{-6}$ cm^2 s^{-1} and the standard deviation of the ln(D_0) equal to 1.5. While these choices do allow for greater than expected diffusion and account somewhat for potential bioturbation, the main motivation for these numbers is to determine whether the coefficient is resolved by the information in the measured data. We expect that the true solution is close to 1×10^{-5} cm^2 s^{-1}, for both δ^{18}O and chloride.

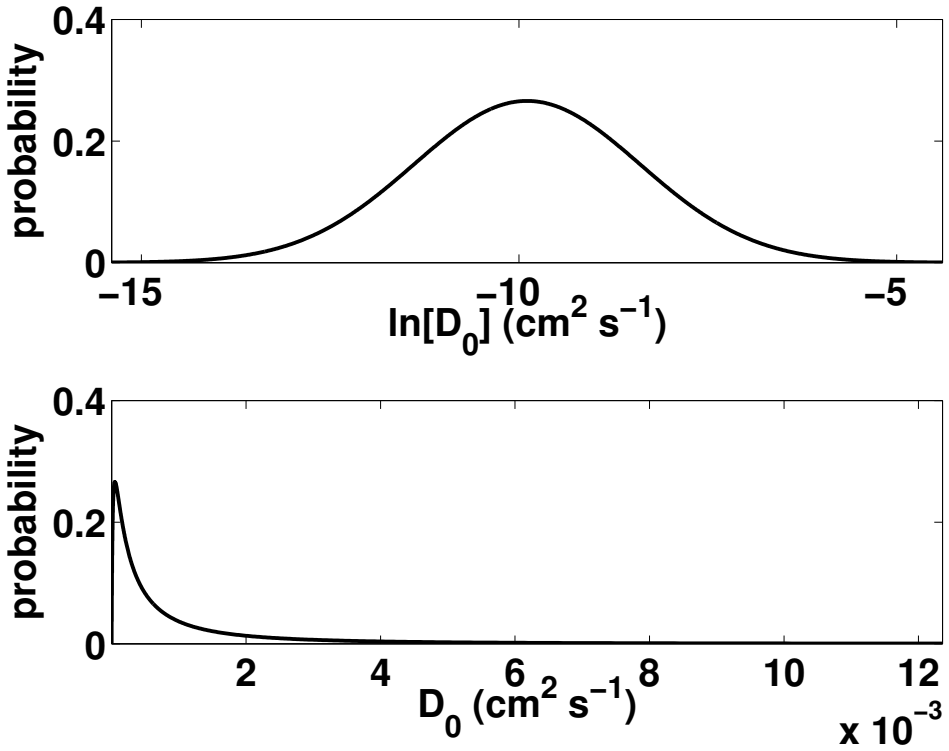


Figure 3.6: Prior probability for D_0 is log-normal centered on 50×10^{-6} cm^2 s^{-1}, with standard deviation of the logarithm equal to 1.5.

3.3 Results

3.3.1 Synthetic problem

We first examine several synthetic problems that illustrate how CATMIP behaves and performs on the 1D advection–diffusion problem and illuminate its strengths and weaknesses. To enable comparison with the linear regularized inversions in Chapter 2, we hold D_0 and the initial and bottom boundary conditions constant and search for only the top (sediment–water interface) boundary condition history. Examination of the SVD of the DGF (Chapter 2) demonstrated that only $\mathcal{O}(10)$ modes are resolved by the data, so we search for a comparably small number of parameters. Restricting our search to $\mathcal{O}(10)$ parameters has the added advantage of retaining a relatively speedy search through parameter space, important because all MCMC algorithms suffer from the curse of dimensionality. If instead we searched for the exact same number of nodes as in the linear regularization problem in Chapter 2, one every 500 years, we would have a 250 parameter

problem. The problem is parameterized by 22 salinity nodes, with higher resolution closer to the present. The minimum Δt is 2000 years.

The synthetic model in the following cases is identical to the stretched sea level example described in Chapter 2. Past salinity is scaled to sea level changes through a constant factor, determined by assuming that the LGM salinity was 37.1 and the LGM sea level was 131 meters lower than it is today. $D_0 = 2.5 \times 10^{-5}$ cm^2 s^{-1} and the porosity is a constant 0.8 with depth. The advective velocity at the depth of no compaction is 0.01 cm year^{-1}. The length of the domain is 150 meters. Initial salinity is a constant-with-depth 35.8 g kg^{-1}. The bottom boundary condition is $\frac{\partial C}{\partial z}|_L = 0$. As before, the forward model is run with these parameters and a synthetic pore water profile data set is generated. This data is then fed to CATMIP to return an inverse solution, and the results generated by CATMIP are compared to the original known forcing used to generate the data.

In all of the following cases we use the same synthetic data set which is generated by running the synthetic model forward in time 125,000 years. Synthetic noise is added to the synthetic data at the 0.05% level. 0.05% noise represents essentially perfect measurement precision, no random outliers, and no sample collection problems. Our motivation is to consider the best possible measurement scenario in order to test the limitations of the inverse method.

3.3.1.1 Linear problem – uninformative prior

We seek to provide CATMIP with a completely uninformative prior in order to identify what information is contained in the data alone. In this example we do not constrain the salinity to follow the sea level curve; instead we assign the same Gaussian prior in salinity to every node. Intuitively we expect the most uninformative prior in salinity to be a uniform prior between 0 and 60 g kg^{-1} where 60 represents an evaporative environment and 0 is freshwater. In the deep ocean more reasonable bounds might be 20–45 g kg^{-1}. However, tests with both of these choices of prior show that the CATMIP algorithm is ill-suited for use with hard bounds. As random walk steps are drawn from a distribution centered around zero, if the current model is located near a hard bound, many models

proposed will fall outside the hard bound. This leads to a high rejection rate and the posterior distribution having an artificial peak near the bound. The artificial peak results from two things that happen when models outside the bound are rejected. First, instead of taking a step, the model remains in place. Second, at the next cooling step, the step size is smaller, keeping the models from moving to a different region of the solution space. These two behaviors have the effect of focusing the models near a hard bound, leading to an artificially high posterior probability there.

CATMIP's difficulty with hard bounds stems ironically from a design feature intended for flexibility. That is, the information passed to CATMIP from our physical model is the numerical values of parameters, their prior probabilities, and their likelihoods from comparing the forward model runs to data. In the present framework there is no way to distinguish between a low probability due to an infinite PDF tail-off or due to a hard bound. However, ideally, the adaptive step-scaling in CATMIP should treat these two cases differently.

While there are algorithmic solutions to CATMIP's difficulty with hard bounds, they are not essential to the present work. We work around the limitation on hard bounds by using a very wide Gaussian spread around the sea level curve as an uninformative prior. To represent the idea that the sea level curve is a poor constraint on deep ocean salinity, we assign a prior standard deviation of 10, or variance of 100, g kg^{-1} to all salinity nodes around the mean sea level curve, such that values outside the range 25–45 have vanishingly small probabilities. The mean salinity scaled to sea level has a minimum value of 34.7 g kg^{-1} and a maximum value of 35.9 g kg^{-1}, so the choice of mean scaled to the sea level is almost identical to choosing a uniform mean of 35 g kg^{-1}.

Applying this wide Gaussian prior to every past salinity nodes we find that the data alone is a poor constraint on the absolute values of the salinity parameters. As shown in Figure 3.7, the recovered mean is oscillatory and does not resemble the synthetic input model. A movie of the highest posterior probability models demonstrates that the mean solution does not represent many models with similar values, but tradeoffs between parameters. However, as the covariance timescale increases, the highest probability models in the posterior become more representative of the mean in the nodes closest to 0 kya.

The highest probability models also do not resemble the synthetic model. When we constrain the smoothness of the solutions by increasing the prior covariance between model parameters, the node solution magnitudes are damped near the present. With increasing covariance, the damping extends further back in time. This uni-directional backwards-directed bleeding results from the fact that the three most modern nodes, from 6 kya to present, are well-constrained by the data. Increasing the prior covariance expands the influence that the most recent 6000 years has on the earlier part of the recovered time series.

The variance of the posterior distributions is a strong function of the prior covariances. Figure 3.8 compares the marginal distributions of the wide Gaussian prior example with 0 covariance and 6000 year covariance timescale. Visual inspection reveals higher covariance forces an increase in the number of posteriors that are slimmer than their priors. While in the 0 covariance timecale case the posteriors that are shrunk only go back to ∼6 kya, when a 6000 year covariance timescale is imposed through the prior, the salinity node posteriors back to at least 24 kya are shrunk significantly relative to their priors.

In order to quantify this phenomenon, we compute the ratio of variances between posterior and prior as a function of salinity node position in time, for a range of covariance timescales. Figure 3.9 demonstrates that as the covariance timescale increases, the shrinking of the variance from prior to posterior extends further into the past. Posterior variance is determined by prior covariance and this relationship is proportional to information age in the diffusion problem. In other words, when less information about the salinity at a given time can be determined directly from the data, the inverse solution at that time is more sensitive to information we impose through the prior covariance.

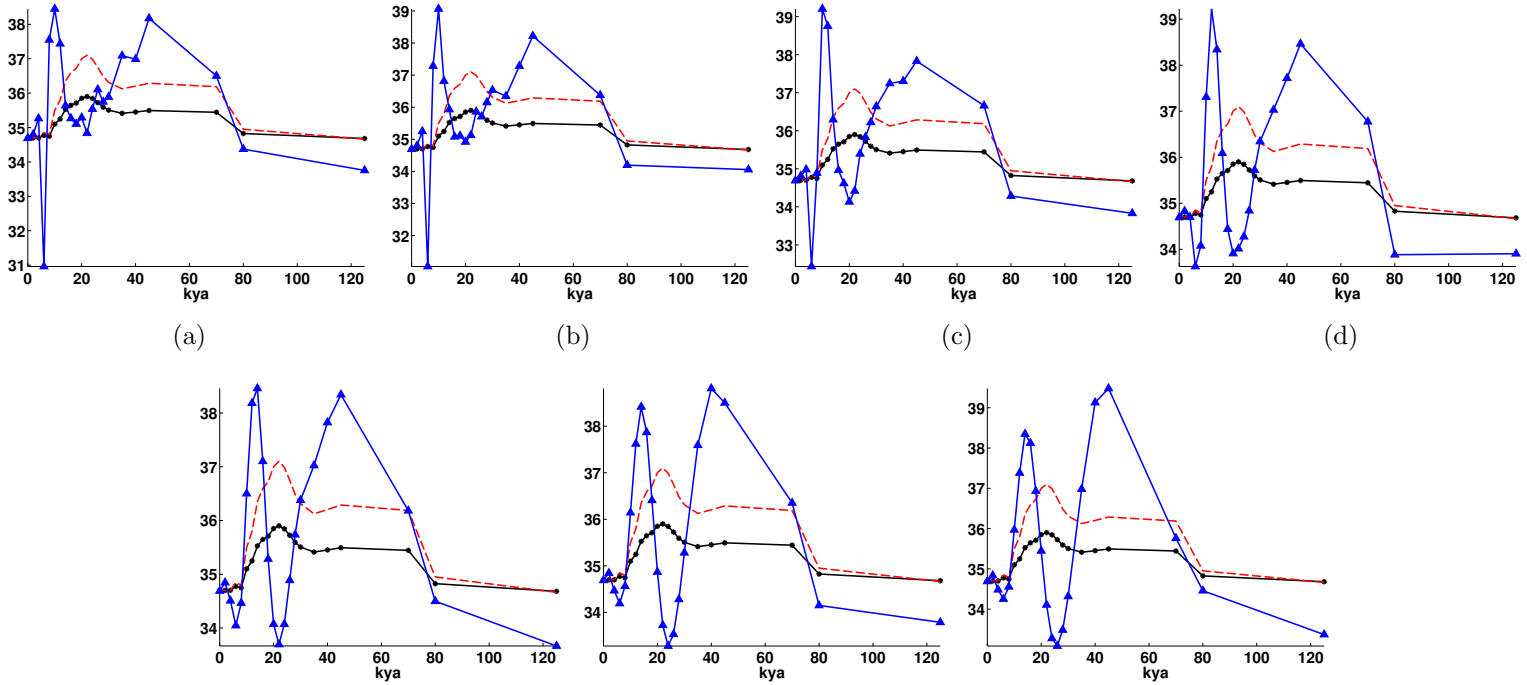


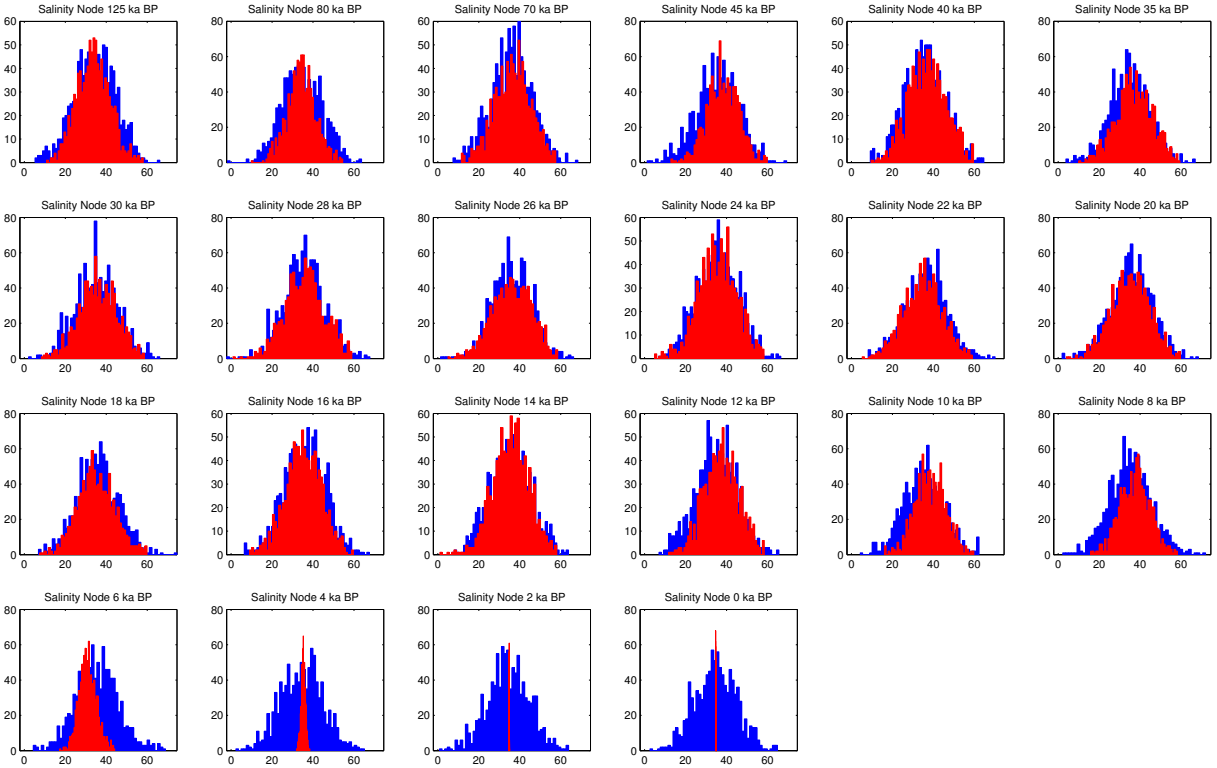
Figure 3.7: Synthetic example with 0.05% noise added to the data. Units for salinity on the y-axis are g kg^{-1}. Red dashed line is the synthetic (true) model used to generate the data. The black dots represent mean positions of prior salinity nodes. The blue triangles are the posterior mean salinity nodes. (a) has 0 covariance in the prior, (b) has T= 1000 years covariance timescale prior, (c) T=2000 years, (d) T = 3000 years, (e) T= 4000 years, (f) T = 5000 years, (g) T = 6000 years.

The mean solution appears similar across prior covariance timescales, suggesting that the data, while not able to resolve individual values, does constrain the underlying covariance between parameters. The challenge in picking this information out is that the posterior covariances are a strong function of prior covariance as demonstrated in Figure 3.10. However, the 0 prior covariance case does indicate slight posterior covariances that arise from information in the data. In reading this plot it is important to know that the changes in Δt happen at 30 ka BP (from 2000 to 5000 years), at 45 ka BP (from 5000 to 25000) at 70 ka BP (from 25000 to 10000) and at 80 ka BP (from 10000 to 45000) which explains the unevenness in the older node covariances. In the more recent nodes, moving backwards in time, there is at first a 2000 year oscillating tradeoff until 12 ka BP. Each node is primarily correlated with nodes within a 6000 year range until around 20 ka BP, after which point there are no significant correlations until 30 ka BP. I interpret this to mean that the oldest nodes act in some sense as an initial condition to the more recent time information. There is a clear breakpoint at the 12 ka BP node from a 2000-year period oscillation to a 4000-year or longer time scale. Correlations below 0.2 are masked, but there must be a low level correlation that balances the negative correlations.

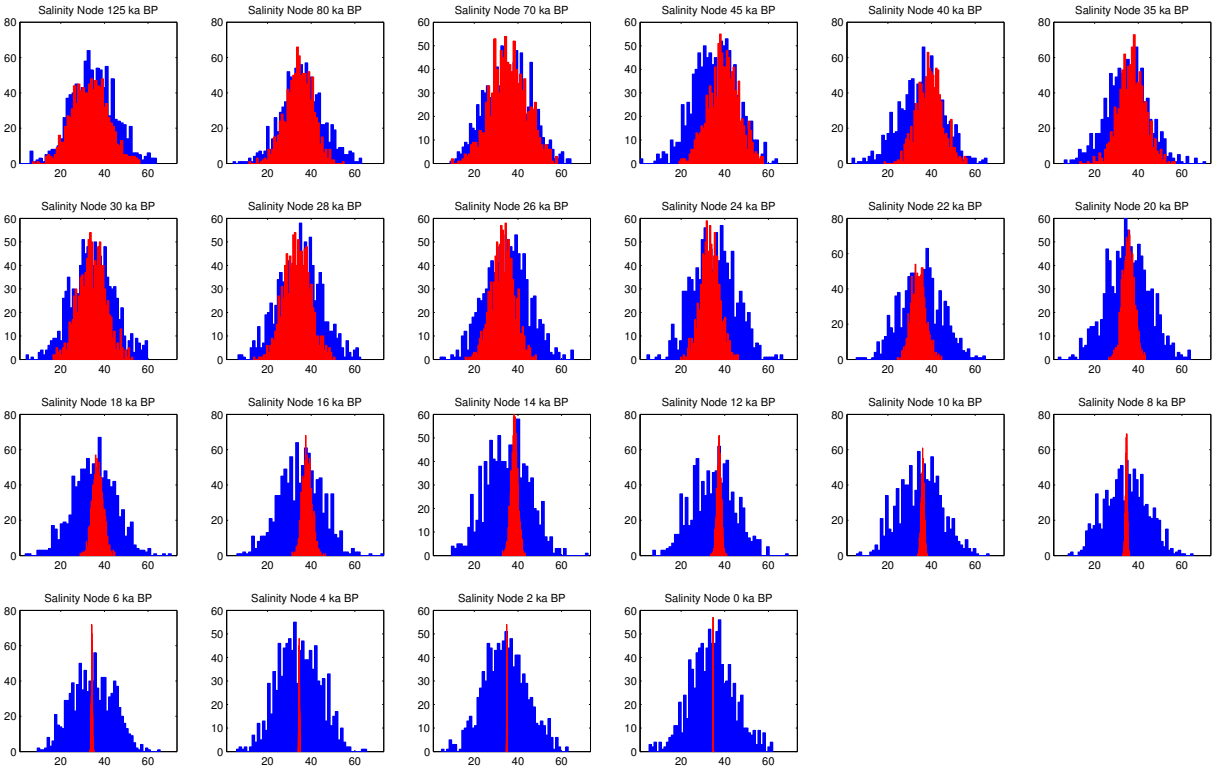
With increasing prior correlation the strips of correlation become longer and larger in magnitude. The alternation between postive and negative correlations suggests the increasing presence of underlying frequencies in the recovered solutions.

From a spectral analysis perspective, it is difficult to robustly extract underlying frequencies from 22 coarsely located sample positions. However, being careful to not overinterpret the frequency information, we can still examine the effect of increasing the covariance timescale on the posterior frequency spectrum. Figure 3.11 shows how the mean of the posterior shifts relative to the prior as a function of covariance timescale. The time dependence of the mean shift flattens with increasing covariance, and there seems to be a sinusoidal character to the mean shift.

Using a Lomb-Scargle frequency analysis of the mean posterior (Lomb, 1976, Scargle, 1982), Figure 3.12 shows that as the prior covariance increases, the shift in the posterior mean increasingly picks up a statistically significant (or at least identifiable at this resolution) sinusoidal character. At 0 covariance there are no statistically significant frequencies



(a)



(b)

Figure 3.8: Histograms of synthetic solution assuming 100 g kg^{-1} variance. Blue is the histogram of the prior samples, red is the histogram of the posterior samples. (a) has a prior with no covariance while (b) has a prior covariance timescale of 6000 years

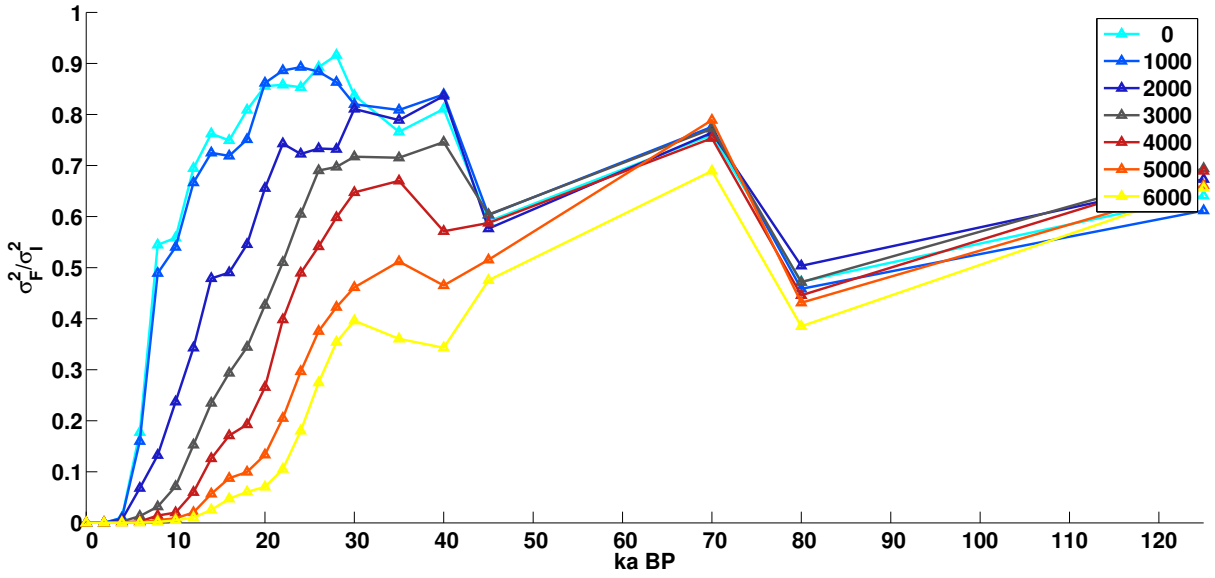


Figure 3.9: Ratio of posterior variance to prior variance for the linear synthetic case with $100 = \sigma_I^2$ and μ_I set by scaling to sea level curve. Each colored line depicts a different value for the prior covariance timescale T, from 0 to 6000 years

in the data that can be recovered. The power spectrum of the 0-year prior covariance example's posterior mean is essentially flat, and all of the p-values of the frequencies are ~ 1. As the prior covariance timescale increases the frequencies of peak power in the posterior shift to lower values (longer periods) and become more significant. Note that while p-values close to 1 are not statistically significant, and increasingly small p-values are more likely to be statistically significant, there is no clear cutoff in p-value between statistically significant and insignificant values.

We can separate out the behavior of the posterior mean and prior mean to identify their individual contributions to this frequency spectrum. The posterior mean, Figure 3.12, shifts to lower frequencies with greater prior covariance. The number of frequencies recovered in the posterior also declines as the prior covariance increases.

Interestingly, the recovered frequencies in the posterior mean are **higher** than those in the prior mean. The prior mean also has a larger number of statistically significant frequencies than the posterior. The data filters out low frequencies; no matter the prior covariance, all of the posterior frequencies fall in a certain band. We can also convince ourselves that increasing the prior covariance timescale T has the effect of picking up harmonics of the prior sea level curve, although we do not know yet whether this is significant.

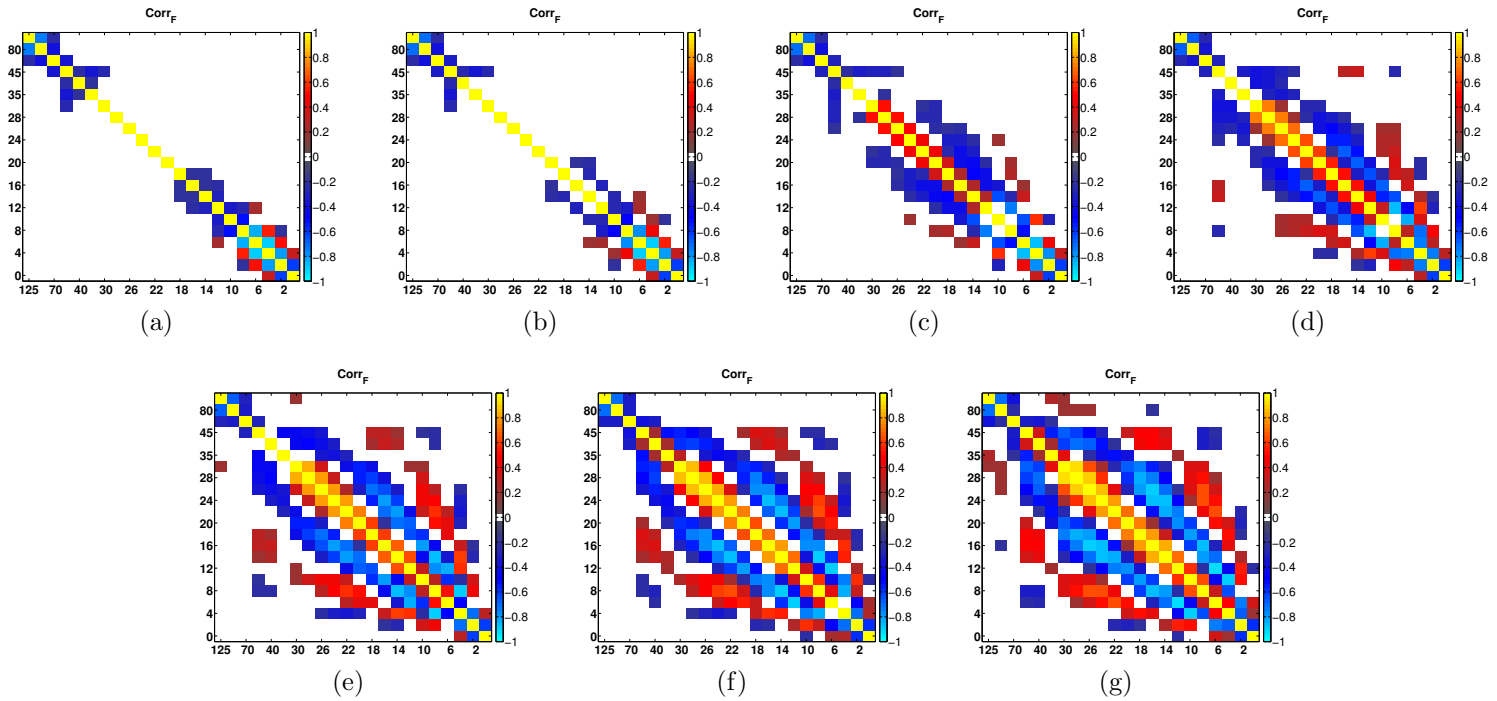


Figure 3.10: Posterior correlation maps for examples inverting the stretched sea level curve using a wide (σ = 10 g kg^{-1}) Gaussian prior with varying values of T. The axes' values are the age in ka BP of each node. Each colored block is the posterior correlation between the nodes represented by the values on the x and y axis. For this reason the maps are symmetric about the diagonal. The scale is from -1 to 1 in unitless Pearson correlation coefficient $r_{x,y} = \frac{E[(X-\mu_x)(Y-\mu_y)]}{\sigma_x \sigma_y}$. Values between -0.2 and 0.2 have been masked with white. (a) has 0 covariance in the prior, (b) has T= 1000 years covariance timescale prior, (c) T=2000 years, (d) T = 3000 years, (e) T= 4000 years, (f) T = 5000 years, (g) T = 6000 years.

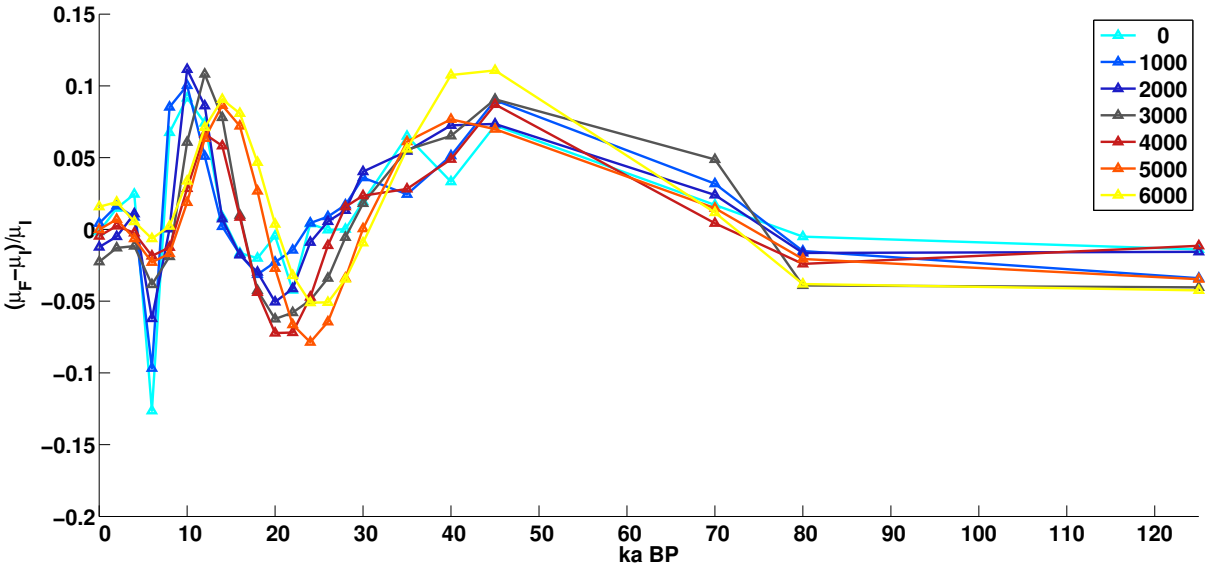


Figure 3.11: Shift in the mean solution from prior to posterior as a function of covariance timescale T. Each line represents a different value of T in years, from 0 years to 6000 years. As T increases, the temporal dependence of the mean shift is flattened or damped.

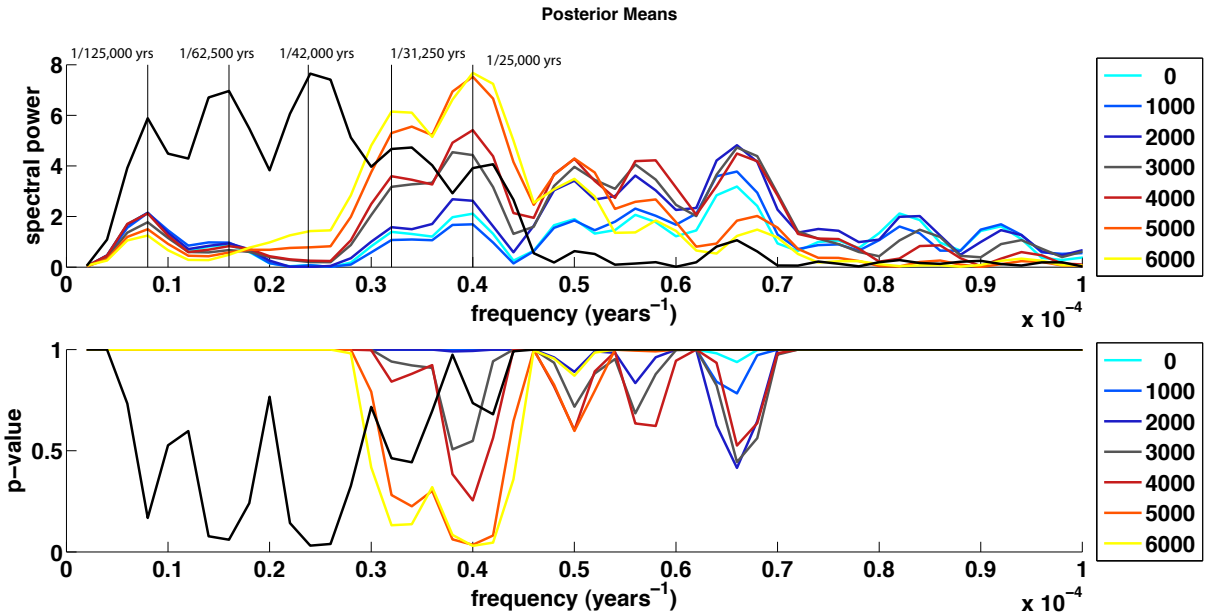


Figure 3.12: Lomb-Scargle periodogram of the posterior mean for the stretched sea level example using a wide Gaussian prior. The black line is the periodogram of the prior mean for comparision. Each color is the periodogram of the posterior mean with a different prior covariance timescale T in years, from 0 to 6000 years. The vertical lines overlain show the peak frequencies for the prior and those of the posterior for the example T = 6000 years.

3.3.1.2 Linear problem – sea level prior with varying variance and covariance

The uninformative prior example demonstrated that there is very little information about past concentration histories in the data alone. The data alone constrain at most 6000 years of the bottom water boundary condition, assuming that the initial condition, D_0 and the other boundary condition are known. However, the uninformative prior example was a very stringent test, as the deep ocean salinity is unlikely to be able to stray so far from the mean. In the next example we consider how constraining the past ocean salinity more tightly to the mean sea level records contributes to recovering past deep ocean properties from present-day pore fluid profiles.

Deep ocean salinities should be near the mean ocean value, although their exact proximity is what we want to determine from the pore fluid data. The way we have framed the problem requires assigning a prior variance in addition to a prior mean on each salinity node. We do not have any prior information on the standard deviation of salinity at the LGM. Solutions that are more than two standard deviations from the prior mean are

unlikely to be recovered, even if their data likelihood is high, due to the multiplication factor of 0 from the prior. To recover an LGM value of 37.1, the LGM salinity of site 1093 estimated by Adkins et al. (2002), when our prior information tells us that the mean ocean salinity at the LGM was 35.9, the prior standard deviation should be at least 0.6, even without accounting for error in the sea level curve. On the other hand, recall that the maximum standard deviation we could apply to the modern deep ocean salinity is 0.1 g kg^{-1}. Already these two standard deviations generate an order of magnitude difference in prior variance.

While we expect that the salinity values will covary in time, we do not want to restrict their covariance with the prior, instead looking at what arises in the posterior. One tricky point about this is that if there is covariance in parameters, assigning 0 covariance in the prior will penalize solutions with covariance. Stated in another way, no matter what level of covariance is assigned in the prior, solutions with both more than and less than this level of covariance are penalized in the search.

A second tricky point to remember is that the variance and covariance are part of the prior, and can **not** be sampled on as parameters in the problem. If we were to sample on these parameters, we would be regenerating the prior probability distributions at each cooling step, violating the continuity of the cooling. Looked at from another perspective, this would be a nested prior. That is if we stated the prior was "actually" just on the variance and covariance parameters, these do not uniquely determine the salinity at each time, and we still need an interior random generation.

With these points in mind, we consider varying levels of variance and covariance in the prior, and their effect on solution space recovery. We show solutions with variance of 0.02, 0.5 and 1 to show the sensitivity of the solution to this parameter.

Figure 3.13 shows an example with 0 prior covariance and varying levels of prior variance around a mean prior scaled to the sea level curve. At the 0.02 level of variance, the mean of the solution space does not recover the synthetic model. The solutions do generally increase backwards in time, showing that data contains information that the past salinity was higher. With increased prior variance, the individual solutions can take

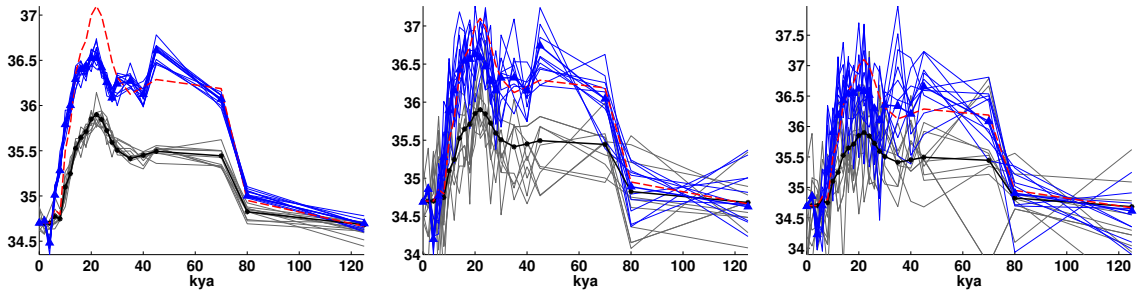
on more extreme values, but there is not a significant change in the mean recovered time series. Examining the correlations between parameters in Figure 3.14 helps explain this phenomenon. The maps are essentially identical for all three covariance cases. Having the same covariance between parameters is what makes the mean constant throughout the cases. The fact that the mean doesn't change between covariance levels means that the mean and some covariance is recovered by the data, but the variance is not. There is also some checkerboarding in the most modern parameters, the switching between red and blue colors in the covariance plots as we read along the horizontal rows, suggesting that the mean value of these nodes is resolved by the data but the absolute values are not.

As we increase the covariance from 0 to 5000 years, the mean of the recovered time series solutions improves in its match to the last 40k years. The improved match of the recovered mean time series to the synthetic input at 5000 years prior covariance shows that the stretched curve that we chose as a synthetic has an underlying covariance time scale of 5000 years at least in the more modern section of the time series. The 5000 year covariance timescale does not affect points in the past as much as those in the present, as seen in the correlation plot, because they are separated by more than 5000 years. Their correlations or covariances with other parameters are hence very small and do not constrain the problem very much. As the covariance increases, the jaggedness of the solutions clearly drops, as seen by the top ten selected time series plotted in Figures 3.13–3.19. When T=5000, CATMIP does an excellent job of recovering our synthetic time series from the LGM to present. In all variance cases the error between the recovered mean LGM value and the true synthetic value is < 0.1 and for other points the error is < 0.05. Also while the individual models have some oscillations, the mean estimated time series does not suffer from instability to noise as did the regularized least squares solutions in Chapter 2.

The literature contains many examples of sea level-type signals, such as ice core δ^{18}O records that show high spectral power in the time series at longer frequencies (10–100kyr) and possibly bulges around the 4000 year frequency (Wunsch, 2003). As the synthetic has a linear relationship with sea level we expect that its spectral characteristics are similar

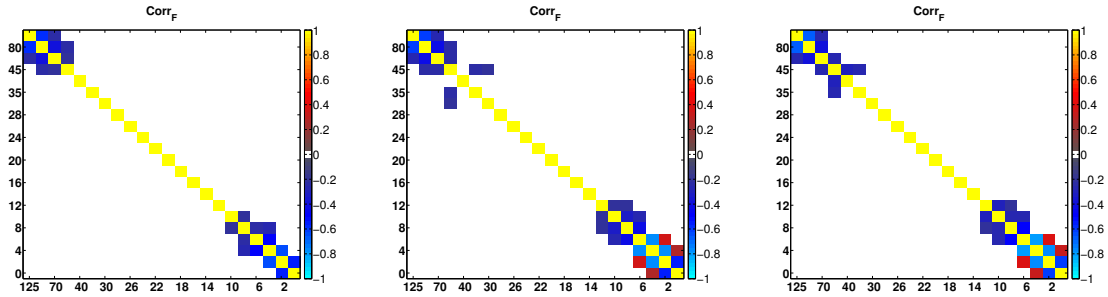
to that of a sea level signal.

For any given covariance timescale, the posterior correlation maps are essentially the same. The posterior correlations, and hence the posterior covariances, are primarily determined by the prior covariances. This result reinforces the point that we can not recover much covariance information from the data that is separate from the prior covariance. It is true that the assigned prior covariances are all positive, while we are recovering negative covariances. By essentially forcing certain covariances to be positive, the rest of the parameters must compensate in response, generating the negative covariances. The negative covariances in the posterior are a response to the prior positive covariances.



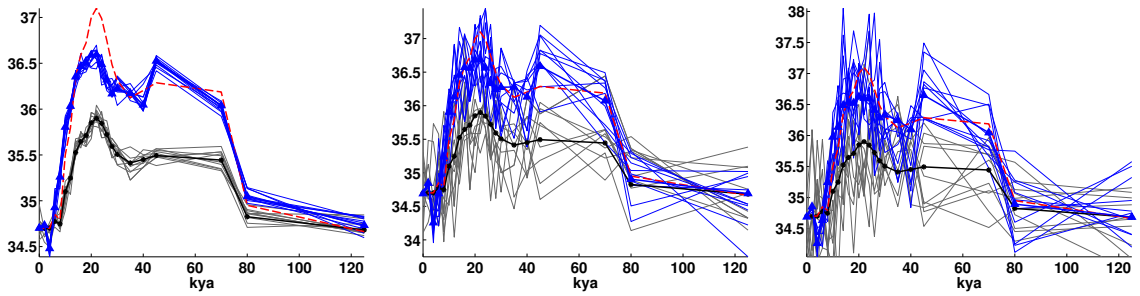
(a) (b) (c)

Figure 3.13: Synthetic example with 0.05% noise added to the data. The prior nodes are independent (no covariance) Gaussians centered around a salinity curve scaled to sea level with varying variance. (a) 0.02 g kg^{-1} (b) 0.5 g kg^{-1}. (c) 1 g kg^{-1}. Red dashed line is the synthetic (true) model used to generate the data. The black dots represent mean positions of prior salinity nodes and the black lines are the 10 highest probability samples from the prior. The blue triangles are the posterior mean salinity nodes and the blue lines are the 10 highest probability samples from the posterior.



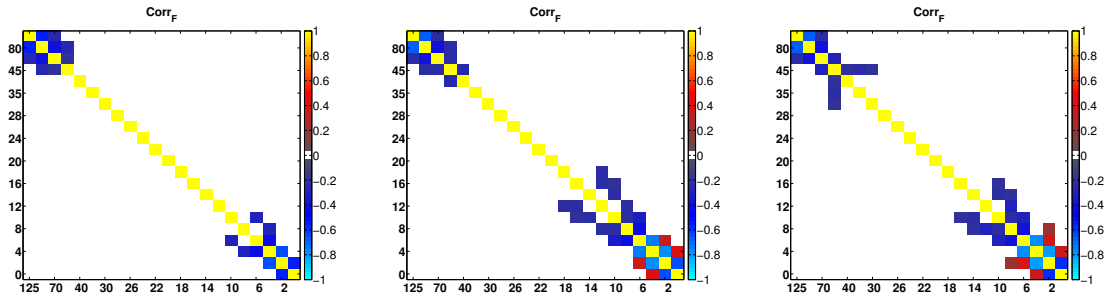
(a) (b) (c)

Figure 3.14: Posterior correlation matrices for models shown in Fig. 3.13 where the prior T=0. The axes' values are the age in ka BP of each node. Each colored block is the posterior correlation between the nodes represented by the values on the x and y axis. For this reason the maps are symmetric about the diagonal. The scale is from -1 to 1 in unitless Pearson correlation coefficient $r_{x,y} = \frac{E[(X-\mu_x)(Y-\mu_y)]}{\sigma_x \sigma_y}$. Values between -0.2 and 0.2 have been masked with white. (a) 0.02 g kg^{-1} variance, (b) 0.5 g kg^{-1} variance, (c) 1 g kg^{-1} variance



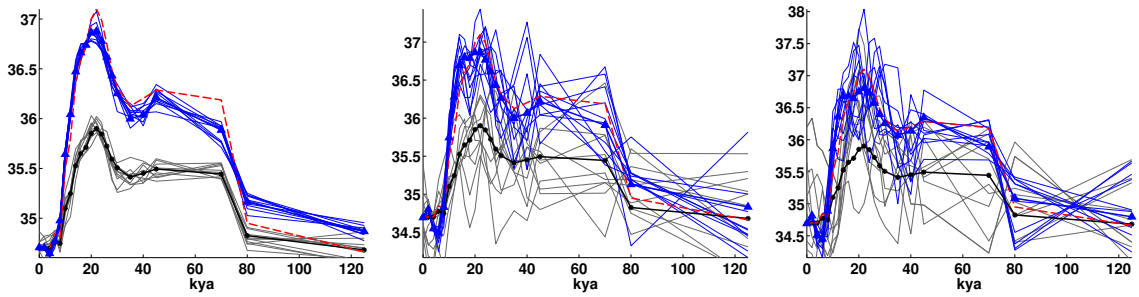
(a) (b) (c)

Figure 3.15: Synthetic example with 0.05% noise added to the data. The prior nodes have Gaussian covariance with time scale T = 1000 years centered around a salinity curve scaled to sea level with varying variance. (a) 0.02 g kg^{-1} (b) 0.5 g kg^{-1}. (c) 1 g kg^{-1}. Red dashed line is the synthetic (true) model used to generate the data. The black dots represent mean positions of prior salinity nodes and the black lines are the 10 highest probability samples from the prior. The blue triangles are the posterior mean salinity nodes and the blue lines are the 10 highest probability samples from the posterior.



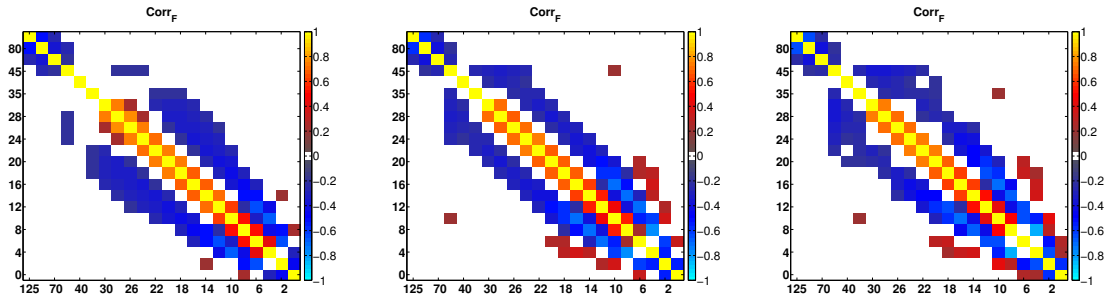
(a) (b) (c)

Figure 3.16: Posterior correlation matrices for models shown in Fig. 3.15, where T = 1000 years. The axes' values are the age in ka BP of each node. Each colored block is the posterior correlation between the nodes represented by the values on the x and y axis. For this reason the maps are symmetric about the diagonal. The scale is from -1 to 1 in unitless Pearson correlation coefficient $r_{x,y} = \frac{E[(X-\mu_x)(Y-\mu_y)]}{\sigma_x \sigma_y}$. Values between -0.2 and 0.2 have been masked with white. (a) 0.02 g kg^{-1} variance, (b) 0.5 g kg^{-1} variance, (c) 1 g kg^{-1} variance



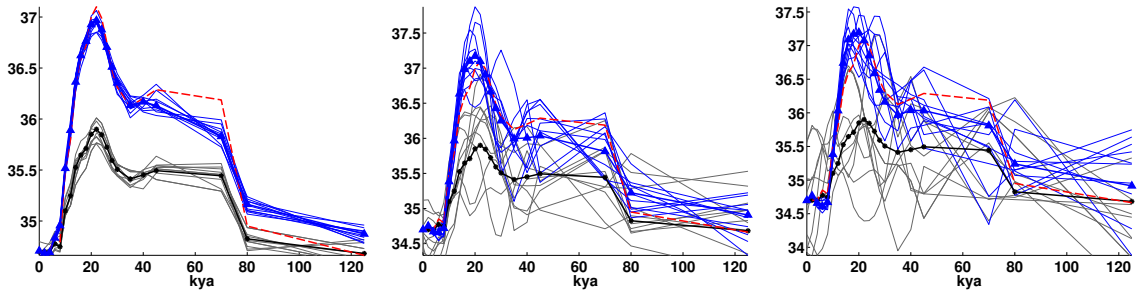
(a) (b) (c)

Figure 3.17: Synthetic example with 0.05% noise added to the data. The prior nodes have Gaussian covariance with time scale T = 3000 years centered around a salinity curve scaled to sea level with varying variance. (a) 0.02 g kg^{-1} (b) 0.5 g kg^{-1}. (c) 1 g kg^{-1}. Red dashed line is the synthetic (true) model used to generate the data. The black dots represent mean positions of prior salinity nodes and the black lines are the 10 highest probability samples from the prior. The blue triangles are the posterior mean salinity nodes and the blue lines are the 10 highest probability samples from the posterior.



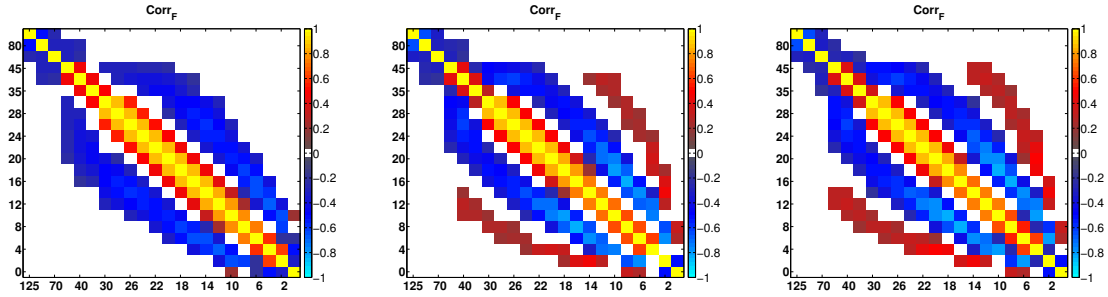
(a) (b) (c)

Figure 3.18: Posterior correlation matrices for models shown in Fig. 3.17 where T = 3000 years. The axes' values are the age in ka BP of each node. Each colored block is the posterior correlation between the nodes represented by the values on the x and y axis. For this reason the maps are symmetric about the diagonal. The scale is from -1 to 1 in unitless Pearson correlation coefficient $r_{x,y} = \frac{E[(X-\mu_x)(Y-\mu_y)]}{\sigma_x \sigma_y}$. Values between -0.2 and 0.2 have been masked with white. (a) 0.02 g kg^{-1} variance, (b) 0.5 g kg^{-1} variance, (c) 1 g kg^{-1} variance



(a) (b) (c)

Figure 3.19: Synthetic example with 0.05% noise added to the data. The prior nodes have Gaussian covariance with time scale T = 5000 years centered around a salinity curve scaled to sea level with varying variance. (a) 0.02 g kg^{-1} (b) 0.5 g kg^{-1}. (c) 1 g kg^{-1}. Red dashed line is the synthetic (true) model used to generate the data. The black dots represent mean positions of prior salinity nodes and the black lines are the 10 highest probability samples from the prior. The blue triangles are the posterior mean salinity nodes and the blue lines are the 10 highest probability samples from the posterior.



(a) (b) (c)

Figure 3.20: Posterior correlation matrices for models shown in Fig. 3.19, where T=5000 years. The axes' values are the age in ka BP of each node. Each colored block is the posterior correlation between the nodes represented by the values on the x and y axis. For this reason the maps are symmetric about the diagonal. The scale is from -1 to 1 in unitless Pearson correlation coefficient $r_{x,y} = \frac{E[(X-\mu_x)(Y-\mu_y)]}{\sigma_x \sigma_y}$. Values between -0.2 and 0.2 have been masked with white. (a) 0.02 g kg^{-1} variance, (b) 0.5 g kg^{-1} variance, (c) 1 g kg^{-1} variance

The histograms of each parameter are equivalent to the parameter's marginal distribution. By comparing the marginal of the prior to the marginal of the posterior we can see the information gain for each individual parameter. Figure 3.21 shows the marginals for the prior variance of 0.02 g kg^{-1}. Figure 3.21a is using a prior with 0 covariance while figure 3.21b is on the other end of the spectrum with 5000 years covariance timescale. With 0 covariance timescale, the means of the distributions are shifted but most of the distribution priors are the same width as the posterior. The clear exceptions are the two

most modern nodes parameters, 0 and 2ka BP. In contrast, when the prior covariance increases to 5000 years, many more nodes have shrunk in variance. Their means are also in a different position than in the case with 0 covariance priors. It is not easy to see how far back the change extends, but in Figure 3.22 which is the same but with variance 1 instead of 0.02, we can much more clearly see that the variance of parameter distributions shrinks backward in time to at least the salinity node at 24 ka BP.

We show how the variance of the posterior shrinks with respect to that of the prior for a range of variances and covariances together in Figure 3.23. The lines are color-coded by covariance timescale which serves to illustrate that the results almost collapse with covariance timescale, or at least are primarily a function of covariance timescale. A variance shrinkage of more than 0.5 is probably not significant. Otherwise, this plot very much resembles the resolution plots from Chapter 2. That is, nodes representing information further back in time are less well resolved than modern nodes. This resolution is different in that we are not comparing the true solution to the recovered solution. Rather we are demonstrating the impact of the information from the data on evolving the prior to become the posterior. With greater covariance, the nodes are increasingly well resolved in variance and the resolution of the nodes extends further back in time. The main point of this plot is that the variance in the posterior, or resolution of the method, is a strong function of the covariance in the prior. The prior covariance sets the posterior variance.

The relationship between parameter mean and prior covariance and variance is shown in Figure 3.24. Again, much of the information collapses on the covariance timescale. Next we see that as the covariance time scale increases, the temporal pattern of the mean shift is squashed, or flattened. This illustrates the point that the shift in the mean of each individual parameter is a function of the covariance. It reinforces the point brought up by the plots comparing the mean with different levels of variance; increasing the variance in the prior does not change the mean of the recovered solution sets, but increasing the covariance does.

Comparing priors and posteriors is one way to see the information change of the method, but it does not tell us how well the solution is recovered. Figures 3.13-3.17 demonstrate that the posterior may not include the true solution if the prior is not an accurate rep-

resentation of the solution space. We can be tricked by a strong change in the posterior probability distribution relative to the prior. In Figures 3.25 and 3.26 we plot the difference between the mean of the posterior distribution and the true synthetic model used to generate the data, for a variety of input covariance timescales and variances.

The error between the posterior mean and the true model is a function of covariance timescale, which we interpret again to mean that the underlying covariance timescale of the synthetic model was closer to 5000 than to 0. However, there also seems to be a fundamental frequency in the error that is constant between different prior variance and covariance assumptions. We believe this fundamental frequency is due to the relationship between the prior and the true synthetic model. Recall that the synthetic is a stretched version of the prior, such that when CATMIP searches for models that improve on the prior in their fit to the data, it will find good fits along the directions of stretching. It then will realign its search in this direction of covariance, tending to populate the posterior with more values that lie along a particular direction. The relationship between the prior mean and the true model is fixed throughout these different examples, explaining why a fundamental frequency arises in the difference between posterior means and true model.

3.3.1.3 Linear Problem – recovery of models with known variance and covariance

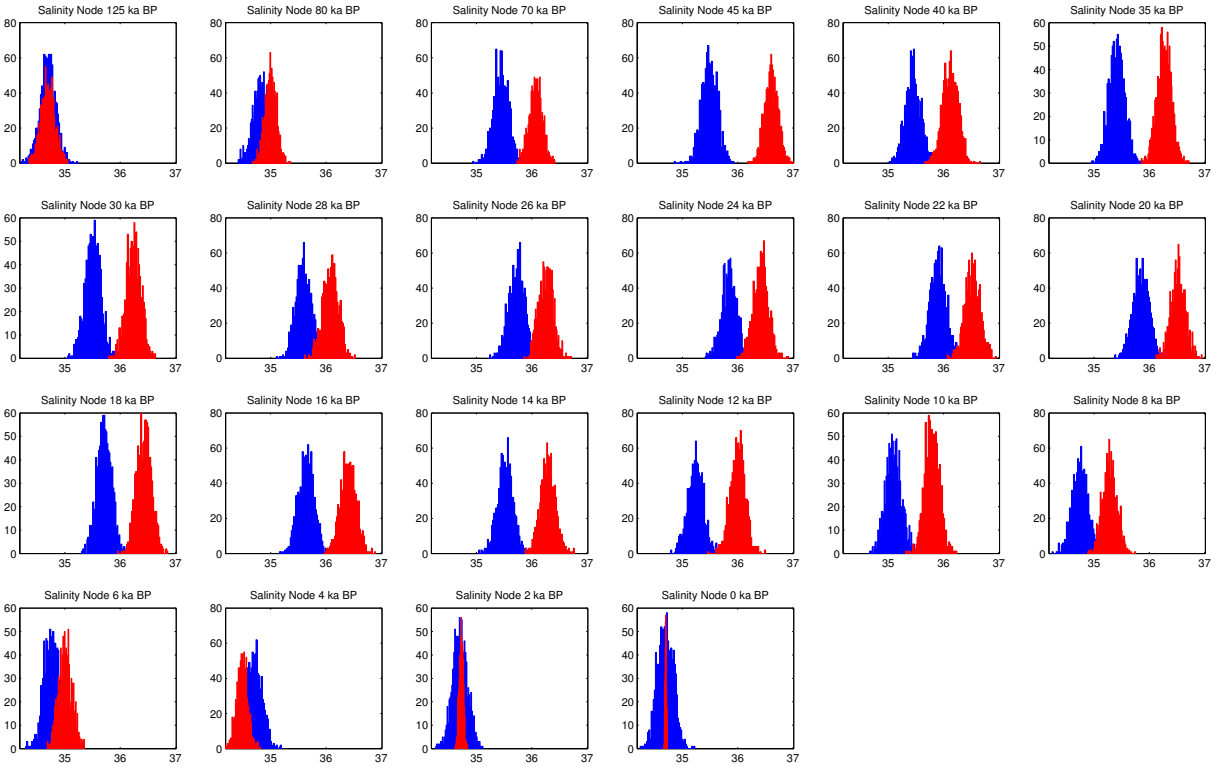
In the stretched sea level example above, the variance and covariance of the posteriors are different than those of the priors, and the relationships between nodes in the time series oscillate between correlation and anti-correlation. In generating this synthetic example, we did not specify the underlying variance and covariance of the synthetic model. Our results suggest that the underlying covariance of the synthetic model is 5000 years or more. The obvious question at this point is: If the covariance and variance are known, does this information in addition to the measured data profile allow us to recover the true model?

To answer this question we generate random sample models from a Gaussian prior with mean determined by the sea level curve to drive the forward model and produce data that we invert with CATMIP. We show how well CATMIP, using this synthetic data, recovers the inputs drawn from a very tight prior, 0.02 g kg^{-1} variance and 4000 year covariance, and a less informative prior, with 0.5 g kg^{-1} variance and both 0 and 4000 year covariances.

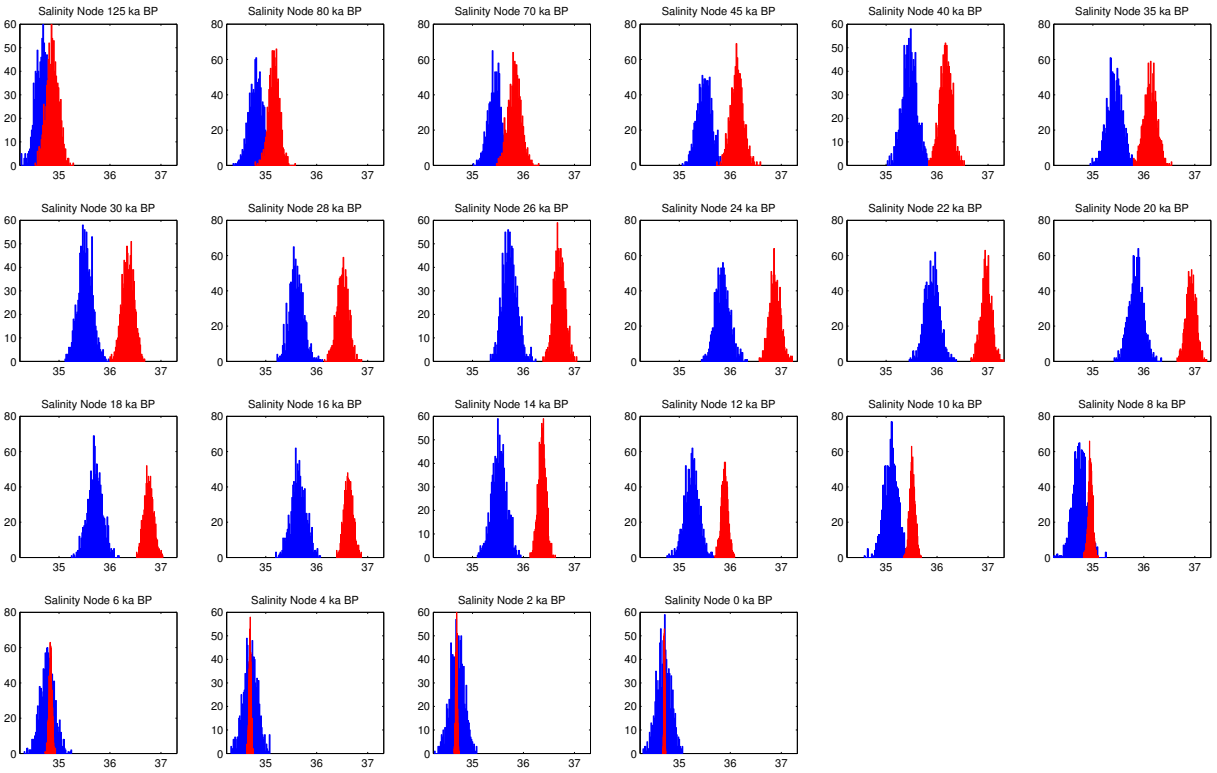
Then, we consider what happens when the wrong prior is assigned to CATMIP. Since in reality we do not know the variance and covariance of the time series that generated the data, we consider the bias in our solution if our prior information about these parameters is wrong.

Figure 3.27 shows ten random sample models drawn from a very tight prior with 0.02 g kg^{-1} variance and 4000 year covariance, in addition to the mean of the recovered solutions and the prior mean. Although we may have expected that the recovered mean of the solutions was the same as the prior mean, this is not the case. Instead, the recovered posterior mean more closely resembles the synthetic model, at least in the most recent 20 ka before present. Looking backwards in time, the posterior mean decreasingly resembles the synthetic model, more so the more the synthetic model deviates from the prior mean.

A more accurate representation of the error in the recovered solution is shown in Fig-

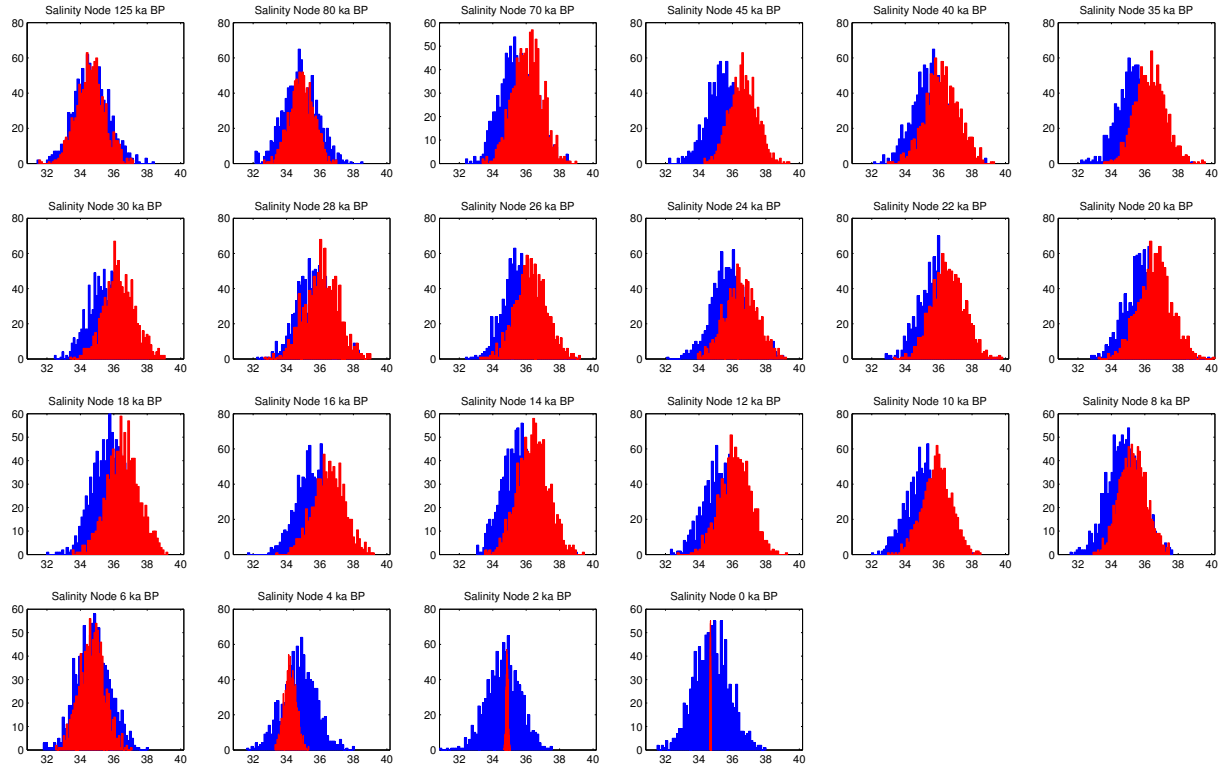


(a)

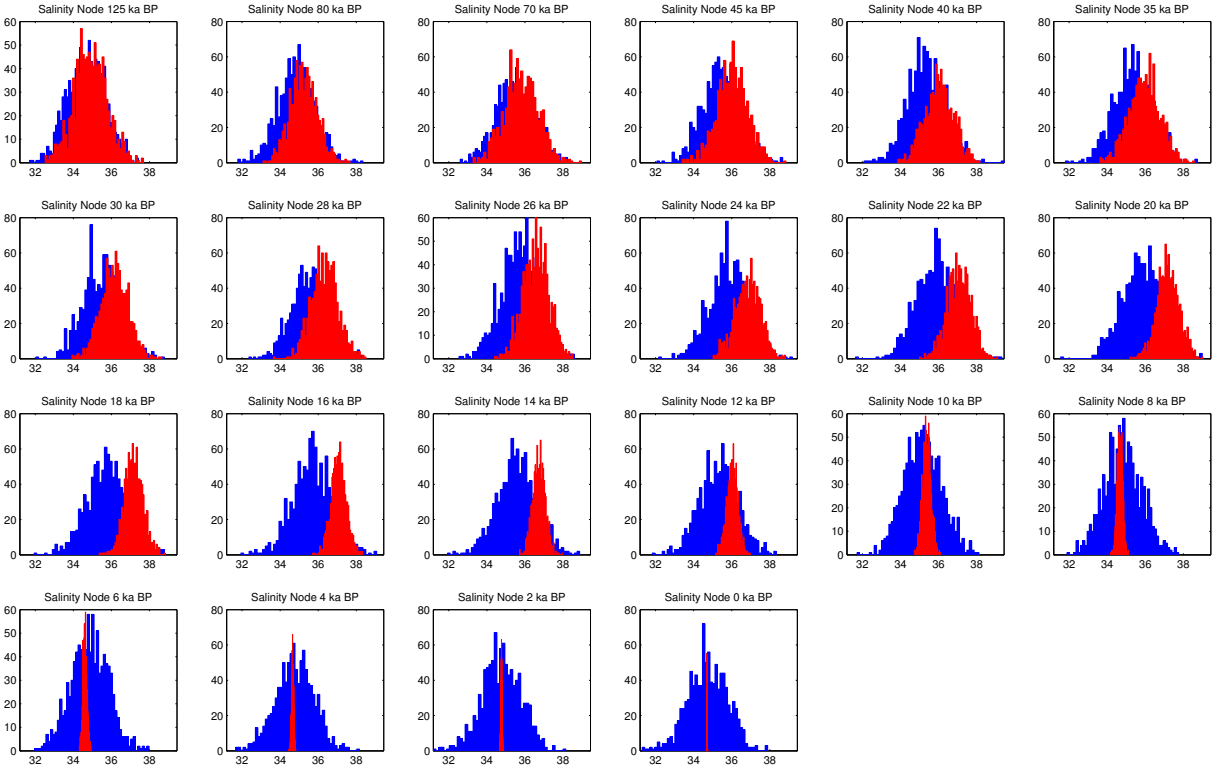


(b)

Figure 3.21: Histograms of synthetic solution assuming 0.02 g kg^{-1} variance. Blue is the histogram of the prior samples, red is the histogram of the posterior samples. (a) has a prior with no covariance while (b) has a prior covariance timescale of 5000 years. Each box is one node of the time series we are estimating. From left to right and top to bottom the nodes move forward in time, starting at 125 ka BP and ending at the present, 0 ka BP.



(a)



(b)

Figure 3.22: Histograms of synthetic solution assuming 1 g kg^{-1} variance. Blue is the histogram of the prior samples, red is the histogram of the posterior samples. (a) has a prior with 0 covariance while (b) has a prior with 5000 year timescale covariance. Each box is one node of the time series we are estimating. From left to right and top to bottom the nodes move forward in time, starting at 125 ka BP and ending at the present, 0 ka BP.

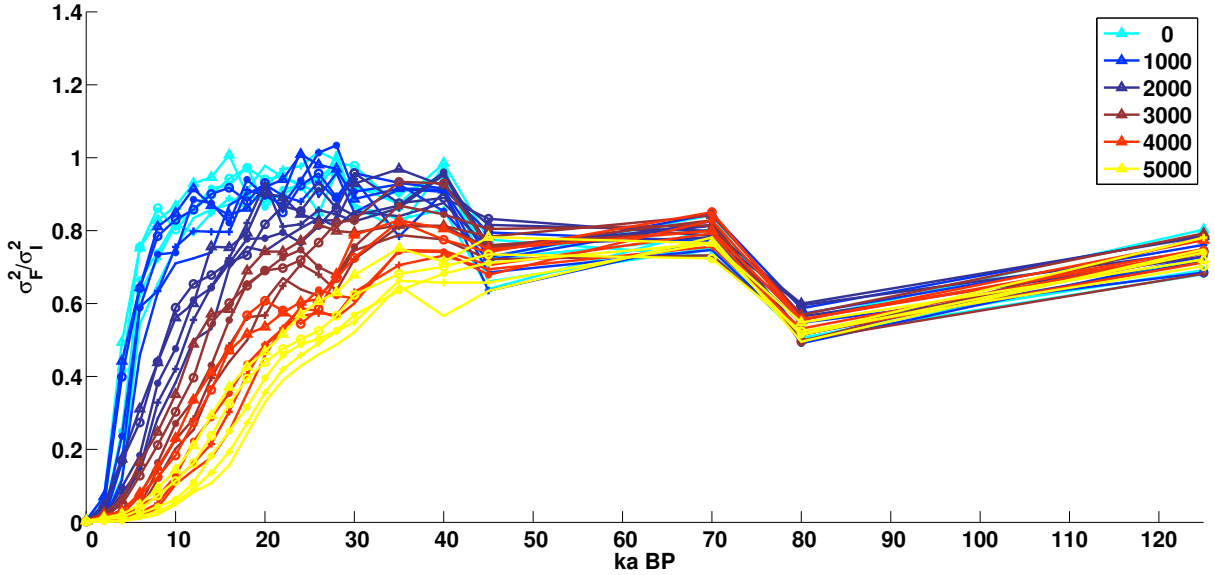


Figure 3.23: The ratio of posterior variance (σ_F^2) to prior variance (σ_I^2) for a range of different input priors and data from the stretched sea level curve example. Each color corresponds to a different value of T, the covariance timescale in years, while each symbol is a different input variance. The symbols help delineate the different lines, but the variance shrinkage is primarily a function of T

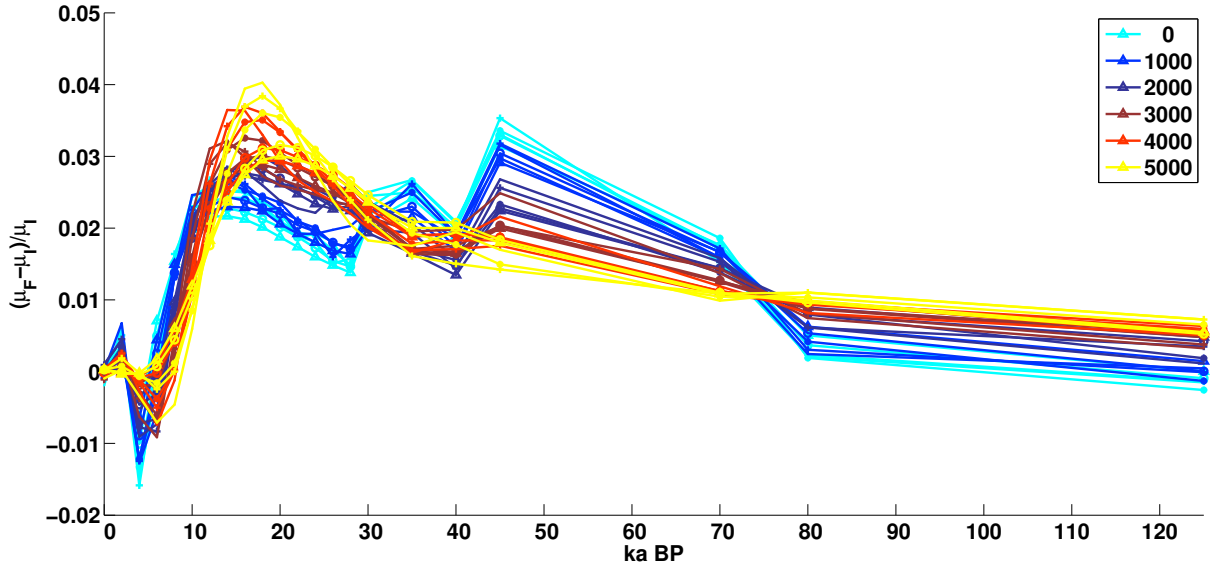


Figure 3.24: Shift in the mean of the posterior population (μ_F) with respect to the mean of the prior distribution (μ_I), normalized to the mean of the prior distribution. Each color corresponds to a different value of T, the covariance timescale in years, while each symbol is a different input variance.

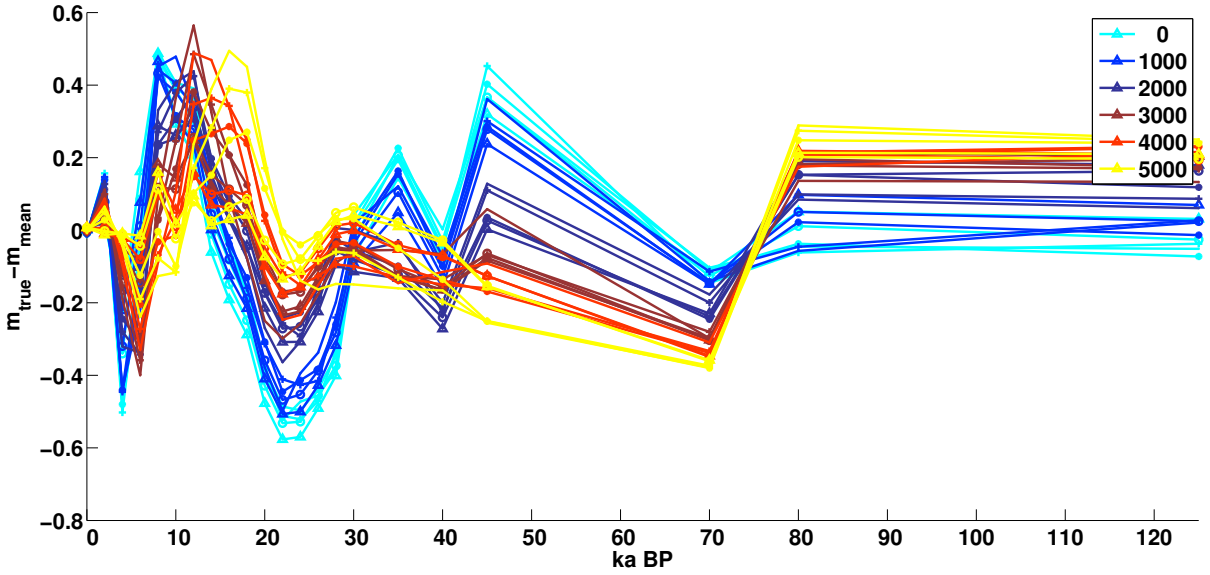


Figure 3.25: Difference between the posterior mean and the true synthetic model (g kg^{-1}) as a function of prior variance and covariance. Each color corresponds to a different value of T, the covariance timescale in years. Each symbol is a different input variance, from 0.02 to 1 g kg^{-1}

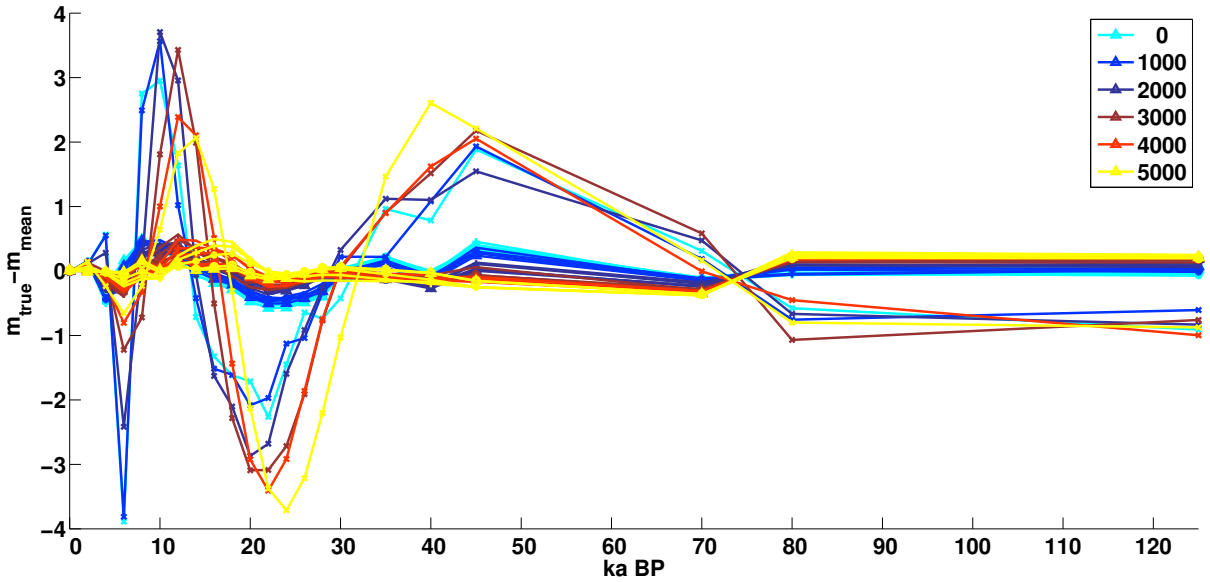


Figure 3.26: Same as Figure 3.25, except also including the examples with wide Gaussian prior $\sigma_I^2 = 100$ g kg^{-1}

ure 3.28. Plotted are the error in the posterior from the true solution and the difference in the prior from the true solution. The reduction in error from the prior to the posterior indicates the amount of information the data is retaining above and beyond the prior variance and covaraince. The error envelope between the posterior mean and the true solution is much flatter from 0 to $\sim$ 20 ka BP. Further back in time the flattening, if any, is much more subtle.

Since we know from the previous examples that long timescales of covariance help restrict the posterior solution space more, the obvious question is what about the case with 0 year timescale covariance? Figure 3.29 shows the recovery of ten random samples with these parameters. The synthetic models are more jagged and the posterior does not follow the synthetic model even in the most recent time nodes. The posterior seems to be a smoother version of the solution, particularly noticeable in Figure 3.29d and 3.29h. The posterior nodes in the most recent 10 ka are sitting at the average of their two neighboring true nodes. Indeed, Figure 3.30, which compares the error in the posterior relative to the difference in the synthetic from the prior, shows that shrinking the error envelope from prior to posterior happens over a much shorter time period, $\sim$10ka BP rather than the $\sim$20ka BP seen in the case with 4000 year timescale covariance. Thus, even when the model is drawn from a known prior, longer covariance timescale models can be more reliably recovered.

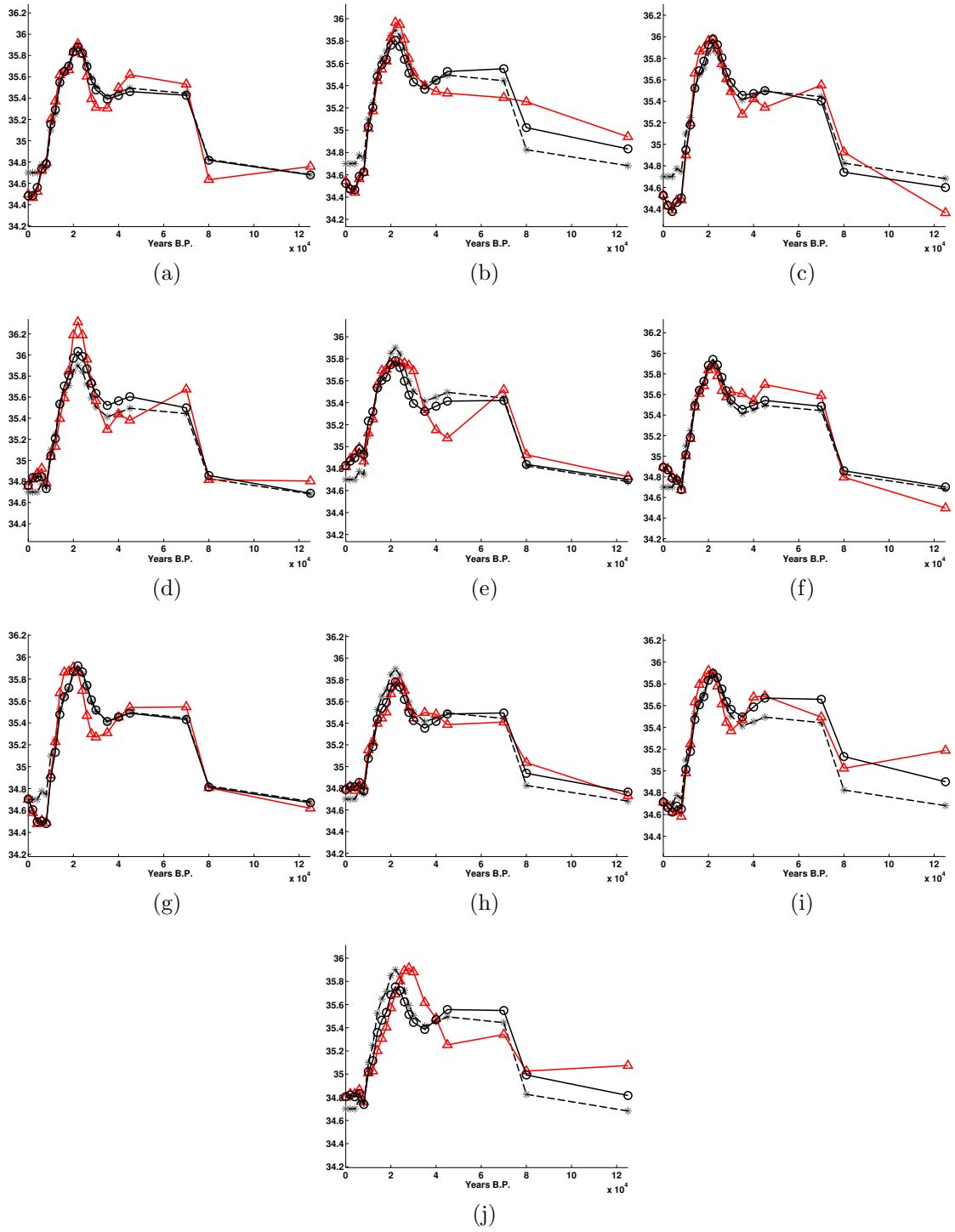


Figure 3.27: Ten random models drawn from the scaled sea level curve with variance 0.02 g kg^{-1} and covariance T = 4000 years. Red is the target or true model from which the data was generated. Black circles are the mean of the posterior samples. Black stars and dashed line are the mean priors

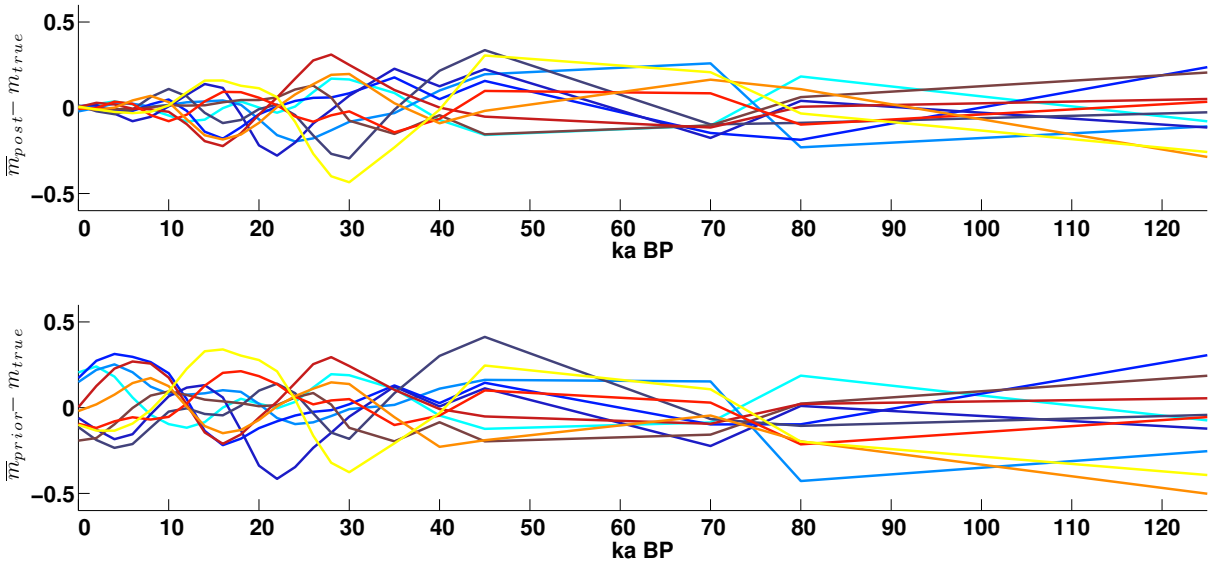


Figure 3.28: Top: difference between the mean of the posterior and the true model (g kg^{-1}) used to generate the data for the 10 random sample synthetic models shown in Figure 3.27, that were drawn from a distribution with 0.02 g kg^{-1} variance and 4000 year covariance timescale T. Bottom: difference between the mean of the prior and the true model for the same set.

What about recovering models from a larger variance prior, in the case that the past ocean salinity spread was larger? We show the recovery of random samples drawn from a Gaussian sea level curve prior with 0.5 g kg^{-1} variance and both 0 and 4000 year covariance in Figures 3.31 and 3.33. With 0 years of covariance, the recovered solutions are accurate only up to 4-6 ka BP. With 4000 years of covariance, the solutions are accurate for longer times in the past, but certainly less than 20 ka. Figures 3.34 and 3.32 confirm this supposition. Comparing the 0.5 variance time series error sets to those of the 0.02 variance, the time limits on information recovered are essentially the same. In both cases, when the prior covariance timescale is 4000 years, there is some reduction in error from the prior to posterior up to 20 ka BP. When the covariance timescale is 0 years, the error reduction drops to $\sim$ 5ka BP in both variance cases. The difference between the two variance levels is the amount of error in the solution. Not surprisingly, there is larger error between the true solution and the posterior when the random models are drawn from a prior with 0.5 g kg^{-1} variance, which just reflects the larger possible range of solutions available. Since there are infinite solutions to this problem, it makes sense that the larger the solution space width, the more potential error is allowed.

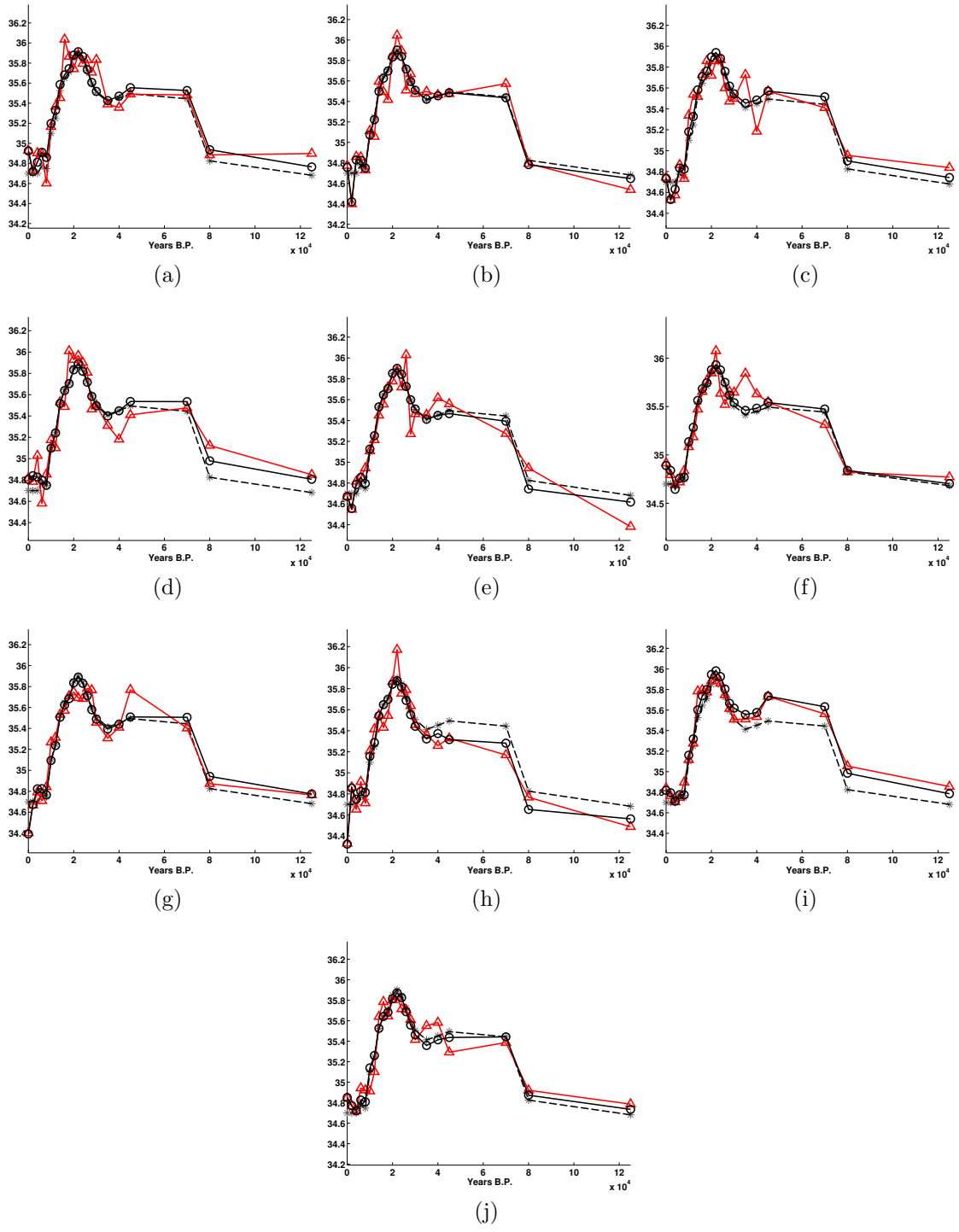


Figure 3.29: Ten random models drawn from the scaled sea level curve with variance 0.02 g kg^{-1} and covariance T = 0 years. Red is the target or true model from which the data was generated. Black circles are the mean of the posterior samples. Black stars and dashed line are the mean priors

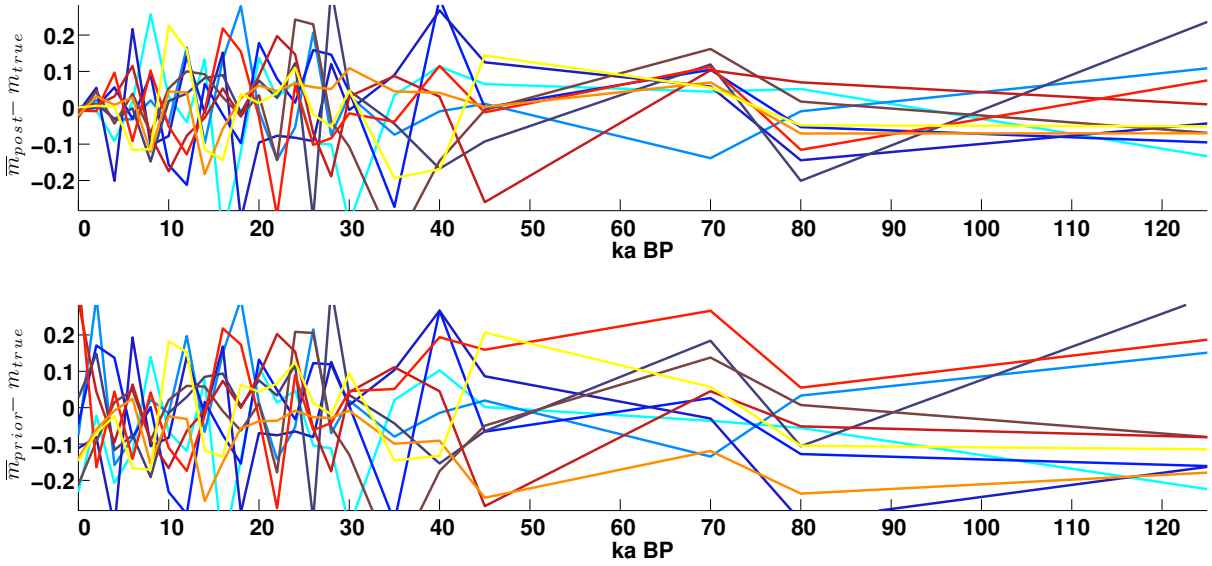


Figure 3.30: Top: difference between the mean of the posterior and the true model (g kg^{-1}) used to generate the data for the 10 random sample synthetic models shown in Figure 3.29, that were drawn from a distribution with 0.02 g kg^{-1} variance and 0 year covariance timescale T. Bottom: difference between the mean of the prior and the true model for the same set.

Similarly to the error reduction, the reduction in variance of the solutions to the random synthetics is a function primarily of covariance, as shown in Figure 3.35. This shows the relative reduction in variance for all four sets of random synthetics discussed previously, 0.02 and 0.5 g kg^{-1} variances with both 0 and 4000 year covariance length scales. The reduction in variance in all cases collapses on the covariance timescale. Even when both the variance and covariance of the solution are known, the posterior variance is a function of the prior covariance more than the prior variance.

In reality, the prior we assign (our prior understanding of the possible ranges of the forward model parameters) may not be consistent with the true physics of the problem. What happens then? We take the cases with 0.02 variance and 4000 year covariance timescale and progressively assign increasingly more inconsistent priors to them. First we show the case where we correctly assign the covariance timescale, but the wrong prior variance. In this case, as shown in Figure 3.36 the relative reduction of the posterior variance is very high, with a maximum value of 0.04. As $0.04 = 0.02/0.5$, this is equivalent to the maximum relative variance of 1 that we would expect if we had assigned the correct prior variance of 0.02. Here we see if the prior covariance timescale is correct and long, assigning too wide

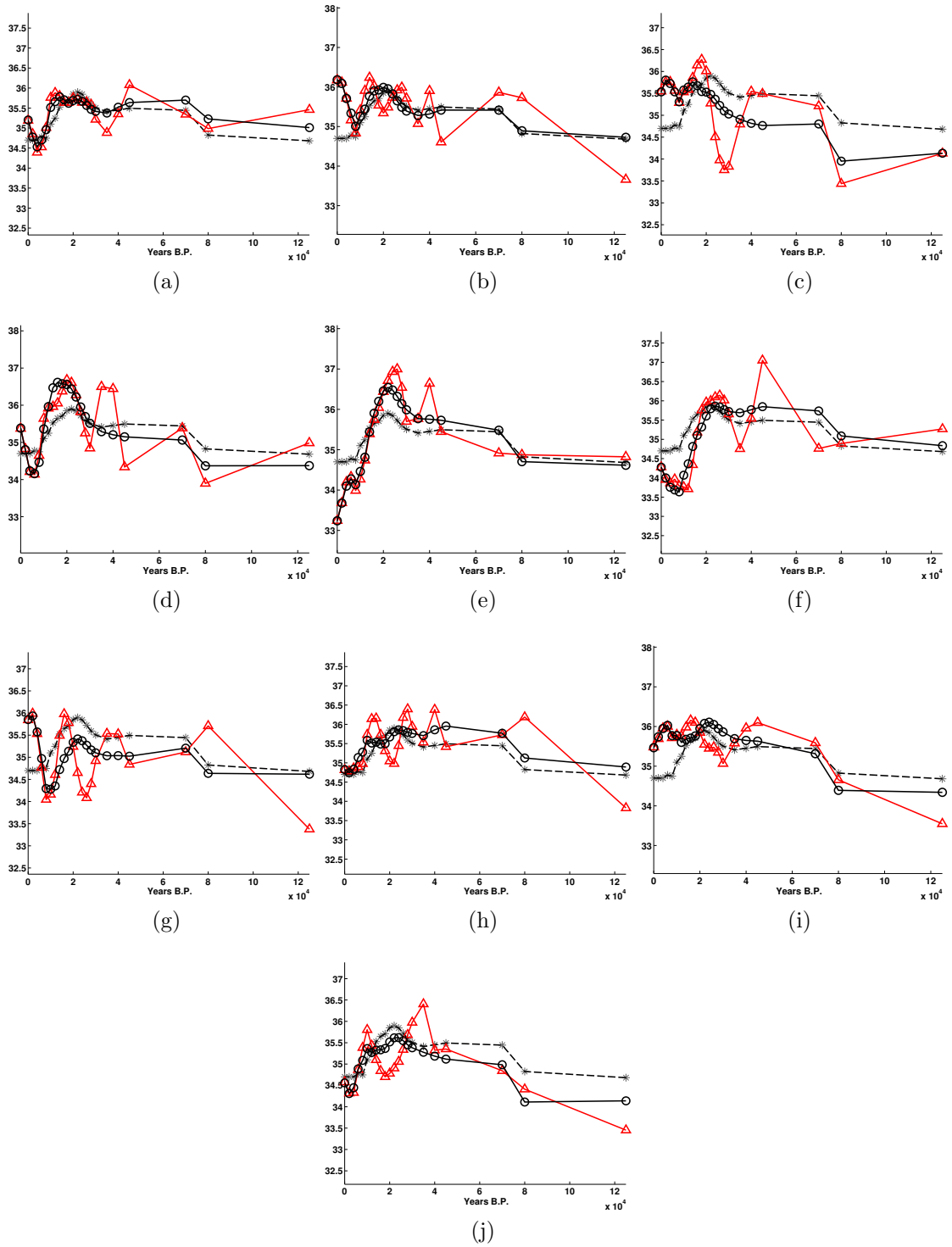


Figure 3.31: Ten random models drawn from the scaled sea level curve with variance 0.5 g kg^{-1} and covariance T = 4000 years. Red is the target or true model from which the data was generated. Black circles are the mean of the posterior samples. Black stars and dashed line are the mean priors

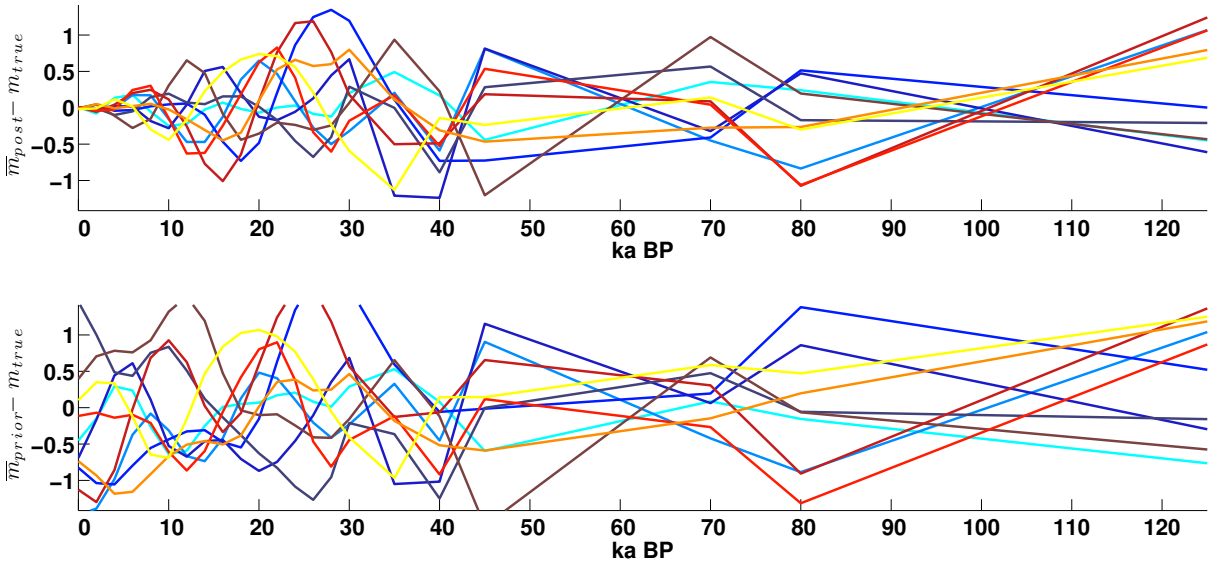


Figure 3.32: Top: difference between the mean of the posterior and the true model (g kg^{-1}) used to generate the data for the 10 random sample synthetic models shown in Figure 3.31, that were drawn from a distribution with 0.5 g kg^{-1} variance and 4000 year covariance timescale T. Bottom: difference between the mean of the prior and the true model for the same set.

a prior variance does not hurt the recovery of the most recent time nodes. However, note that the set of reductions resembles the case when the prior covariance is 0. The growth of relative variance jumps up sharply as we go back in time instead of being flat. So when we assign too wide a variance, we no longer get the advantage of the long timescale covariance in recovering increased information further back in time.

Next we show the results when the input prior is incorrect in both the variance and covariance. Here we inform CATMIP that the prior information is 0.5 variance and 0 covariance. The plot of variance reduction, Figure 3.37, is almost identical to that of when we assign the wrong variance only. Here assigning the wrong variance, no matter whether the covariance is correct, has the effect of removing the benefits of the long covariance timescale in recovering older parts of the solution. In reality, we can't choose the value of T, however the intent of this exercise is to discover what we can expect to recover with confidence given a particular set of prior information.

Finally, we consider what happens when the input prior variance matches the distribution from which the synthetic solution was drawn, but the input covariance timescale is incorrect. Here we input a 0.02 variance and 0 year covariance timescale to the synthetic

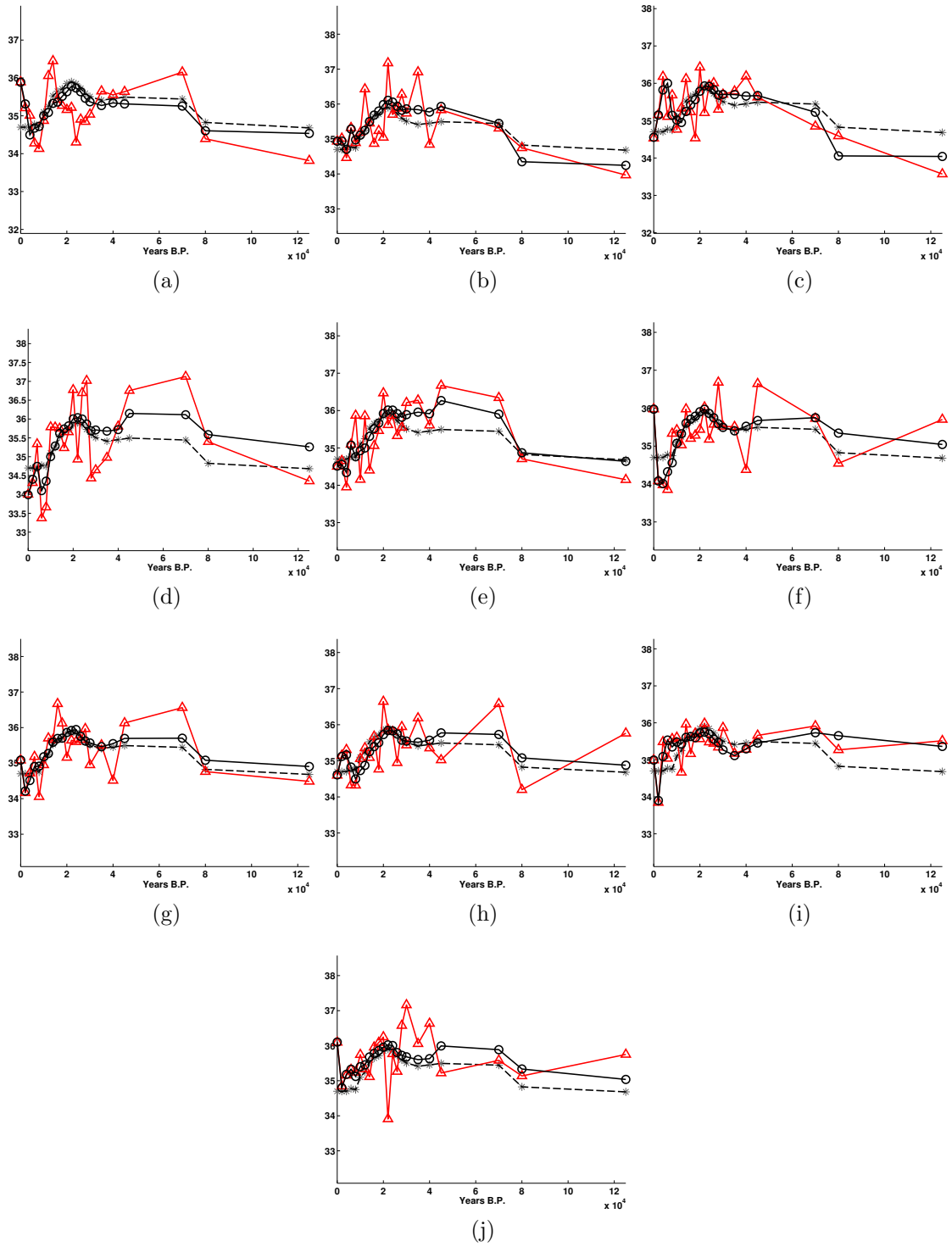


Figure 3.33: Ten random models drawn from the scaled sea level curve with variance 0.5 g kg^{-1} and covariance T = 0 years. Red is the target or true model from which the data was generated. Black circles are the mean of the posterior samples. Black stars and dashed line are the mean priors

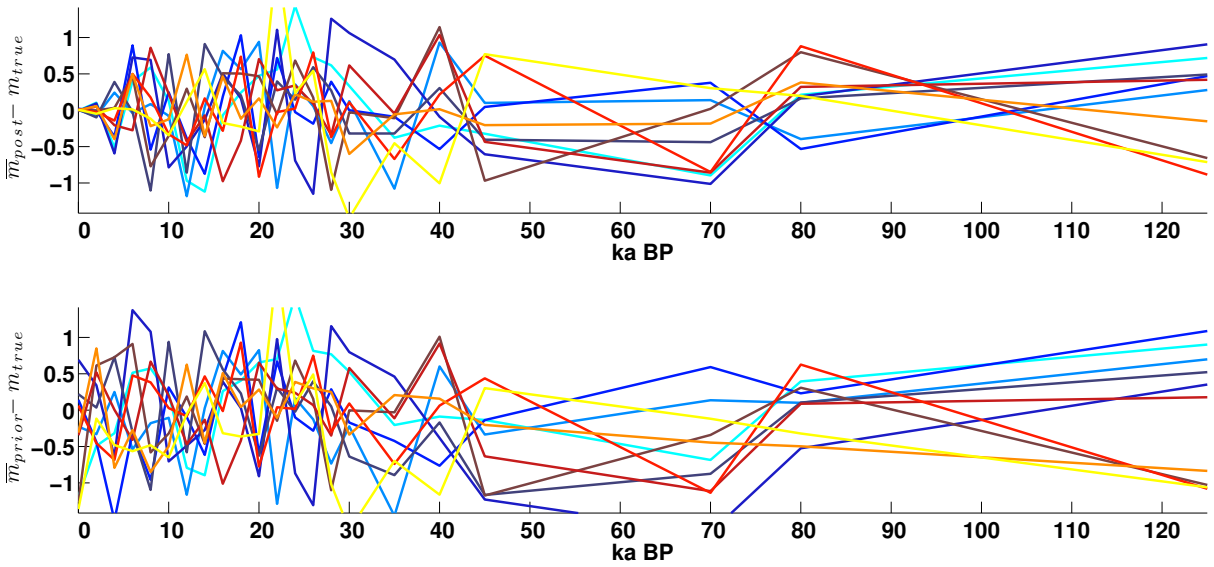


Figure 3.34: Top: difference between the mean of the posterior and the true model (g kg^{-1}) used to generate the data for the 10 random sample synthetic models shown in Figure 3.33, that were drawn from a distribution with 0.5 g kg^{-1} variance and 0 year covariance timescale T. Bottom: difference between the mean of the prior and the true model for the same set.

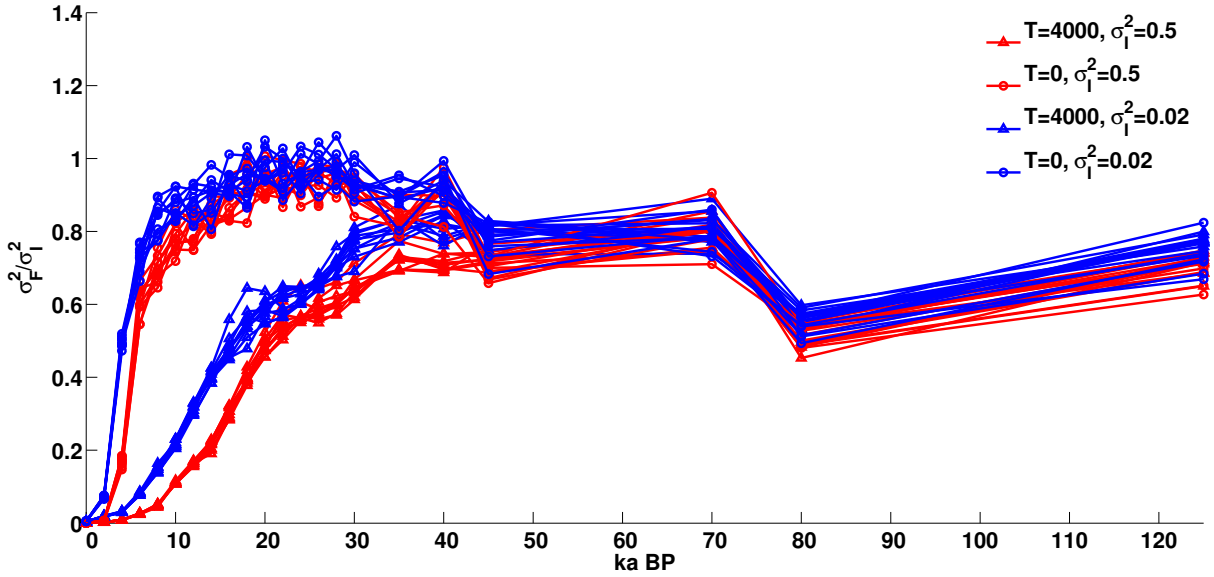


Figure 3.35: Reduction in variance from (σ_I^2) to posterior (σ_F^2) for random samples with different variance and covariance drawn from known priors. Blue lines have prior variance 0.02 g kg^{-1} while red lines have prior variance 0.5 g kg^{-1}. The reduction of variance from the prior to the posterior is a strong function of covariance timescale T

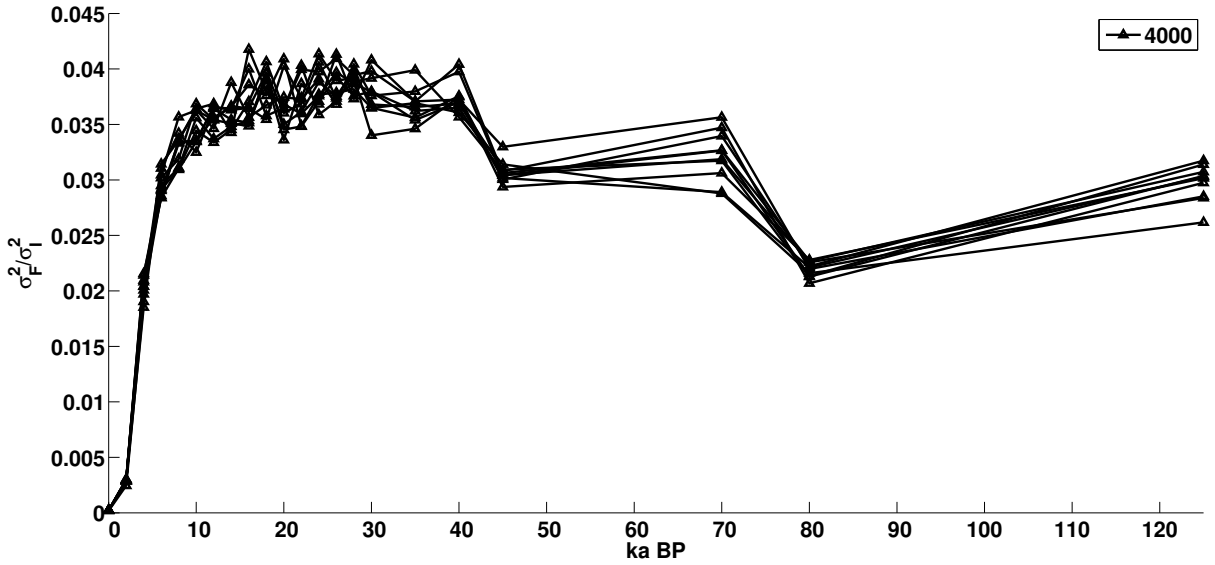


Figure 3.36: Reduction in variance from prior (σ_I^2) to posterior (σ_F^2) for random sample models generated from a distribution with 0.02 g kg^{-1} = σ^2 and 4000 years = T when CATMIP is fed the wrong prior (0.5 g kg^{-1} = σ_I^2, 4000 years = T)

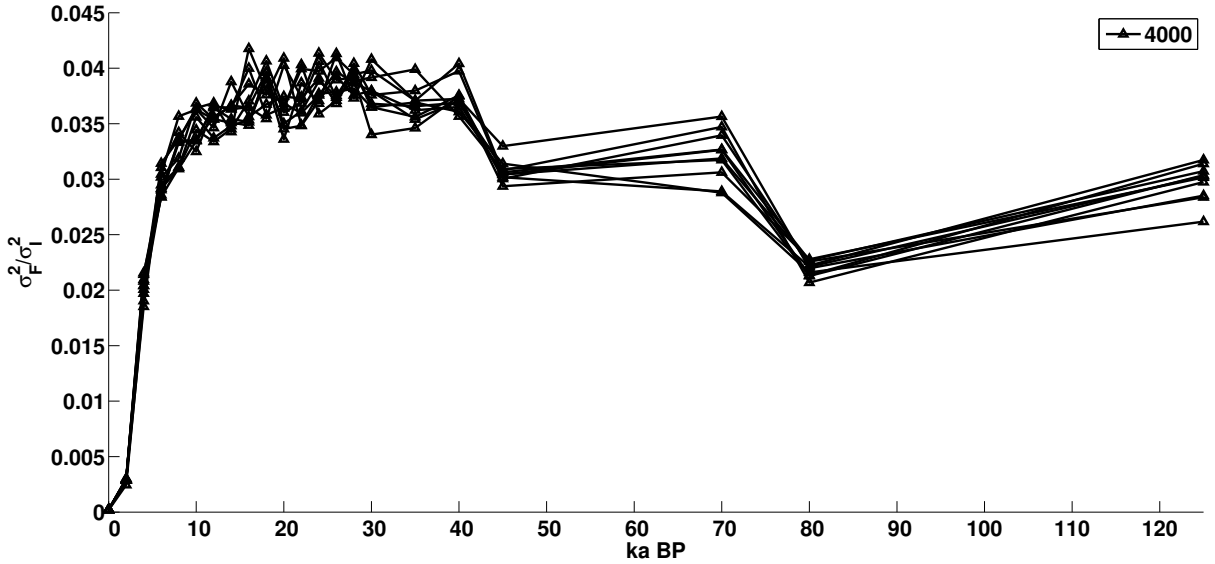


Figure 3.37: Reduction in variance from prior (σ_I^2) to posterior (σ_F^2) for random sample models generated from a distribution with 0.02 g kg^{-1} = σ^2 and 4000 years = T when CATMIP is fed the wrong prior (0.5 g kg^{-1} = σ_I^2, 0 years = T)

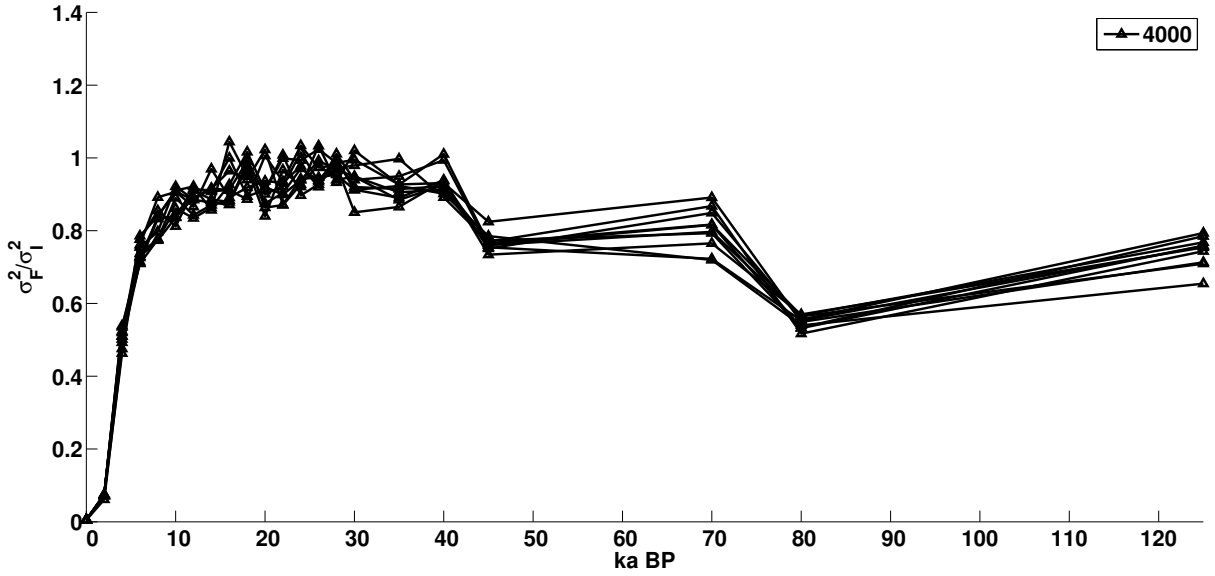


Figure 3.38: Reduction in variance from prior (σ_I^2) to posterior (σ_F^2) for random sample models generated from a distribution with 0.02 g kg^{-1} = σ^2 and 4000 years = T when CATMIP is fed the wrong prior (0.02 g kg^{-1} = σ_I^2, 0 years = T)

models drawn from the distribution with 0.02 variance and 4000 year covariance. The variance reduction looks like a scaled version of the previous two cases with 0.5 variance. In all of these cases we apply a less restrictive prior to the synthetic examples than the true prior. So if the prior is wrong, in that it admits more solutions than it should, we recover significantly less information than if our prior is a good description of the solution space.

3.3.1.4 Nonlinear problem – recovery of models with known variance and covariance, allowing D_0 and initial condition to vary

When we recover the bottom water time series from real data, the coefficient D_0 and the initial conditions in the sediment are unknown. We now show a synthetic problem in which we sample on these parameters in addition to nodes that represent the bottom water time series. Here we consider a sediment domain of 350 meters and the initial condition nodes are placed evenly spaced from top to bottom of the sediment column. We consider four nodes and allow the prior for each of these nodes to be an independent Gaussian centered at 34.6 g kg^{-1} with a standard deviation of 1 g kg^{-1}.

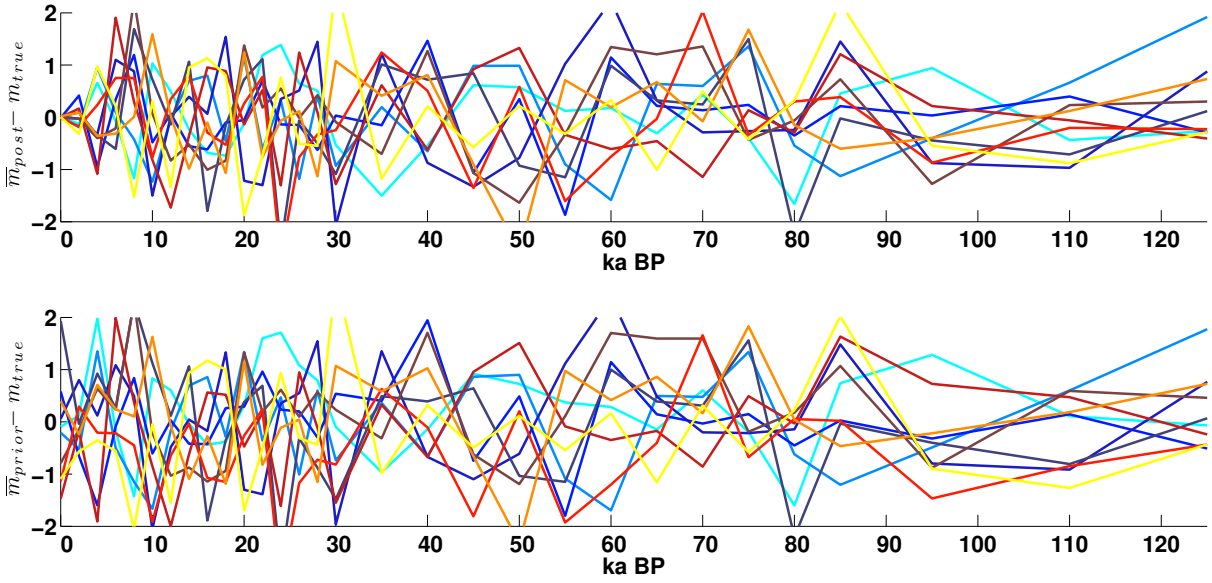


Figure 3.39: Top – difference between the true time series solution and the mean posterior, compared to bottom – the difference between the prior and the true time series solution for random synthetic model samples in the nonlinear problem with 1=σ^2, 0 years = T

The boundary condition time series for this problem has slightly increased resolution further back in time than the linear problems considered above, and thus there are 30 nodes representing the time series for salinity. In total the problem has 35 parameters.

We run a set of random synthetic cases drawn from Gaussians with both 0 and 6000 year covariance timescales in order to consider the extreme values of interest for the real ocean. We also consider a variance of both 0.05 and 1. 0.05 represents a similar-to-modern variance in deep ocean salinity while 1 is an extreme case that allows for vastly different scenarios in the deep ocean.

Similarly to the linear case, the error in the reconstructed solutions are primarily a function of the covariance timescale T. By comparing Figures 3.39 and 3.40 we see that the error envelope expands moving backwards in time, and the amount it expands is inversely propotional to the covariance timescale T.

In general the diffusion coefficient is well-resolved by the data. The posterior variance of D_0 is much smaller than the prior variance in all of the cases we considered. Figure 3.41 shows characteristic comparisons of prior, posterior and true values of D_0 from the random synthetic solutions. The mean of the posterior aligns closely with the true solution and

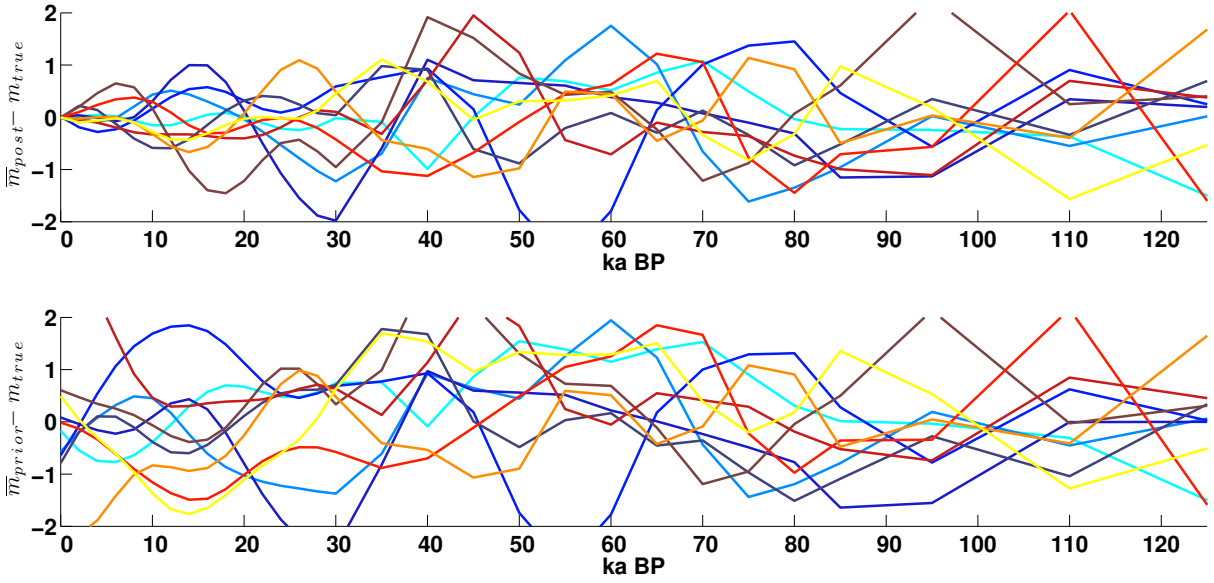


Figure 3.40: Top – difference between the true time series solution and the mean posterior, compared to bottom – the difference between the prior and the true time series solution for random synthetic model samples in the nonlinear problem with 1=σ^2, 6000 years = T

is not a strong function of the timeseries prior covariances. However, the posteriors are wider in the cases with wider prior variance in the salinity nodes. A greater spread in salinities allows a greater spread in diffusion coefficient (or vice versa), demonstrating the fundamental covariance between the diffusion coefficient and the time series of salinities that produce the same measured data.

One consequence of allowing D_0 and the initial conditions to vary is that the posteriors in some cases can be wider than the priors. Figure 3.42 shows that the variance reduction in the cases when T = 6000 and σ^2 =1 can be larger than 1, which means that the posterior has widened relative to the prior. Additionally the reduction in variance shrinks much less with a large covariance timescale T than it did in the linear cases. This is because the additional freedom in the added free parameters allows those to change rather than the time series, letting a wider variety of time series remain in the distribution.

In some cases, the posteriors of our parameters have significantly non-Gaussian distributions. Figure 3.43 is a comparision of the prior and posterior marginals from a random synthetic example drawn from the distribution σ^2 = 1 g kg^{-1} and 0 years = T. The posterior for the log of D_0 has two peaks. Similarly the posterior for the boundary con-

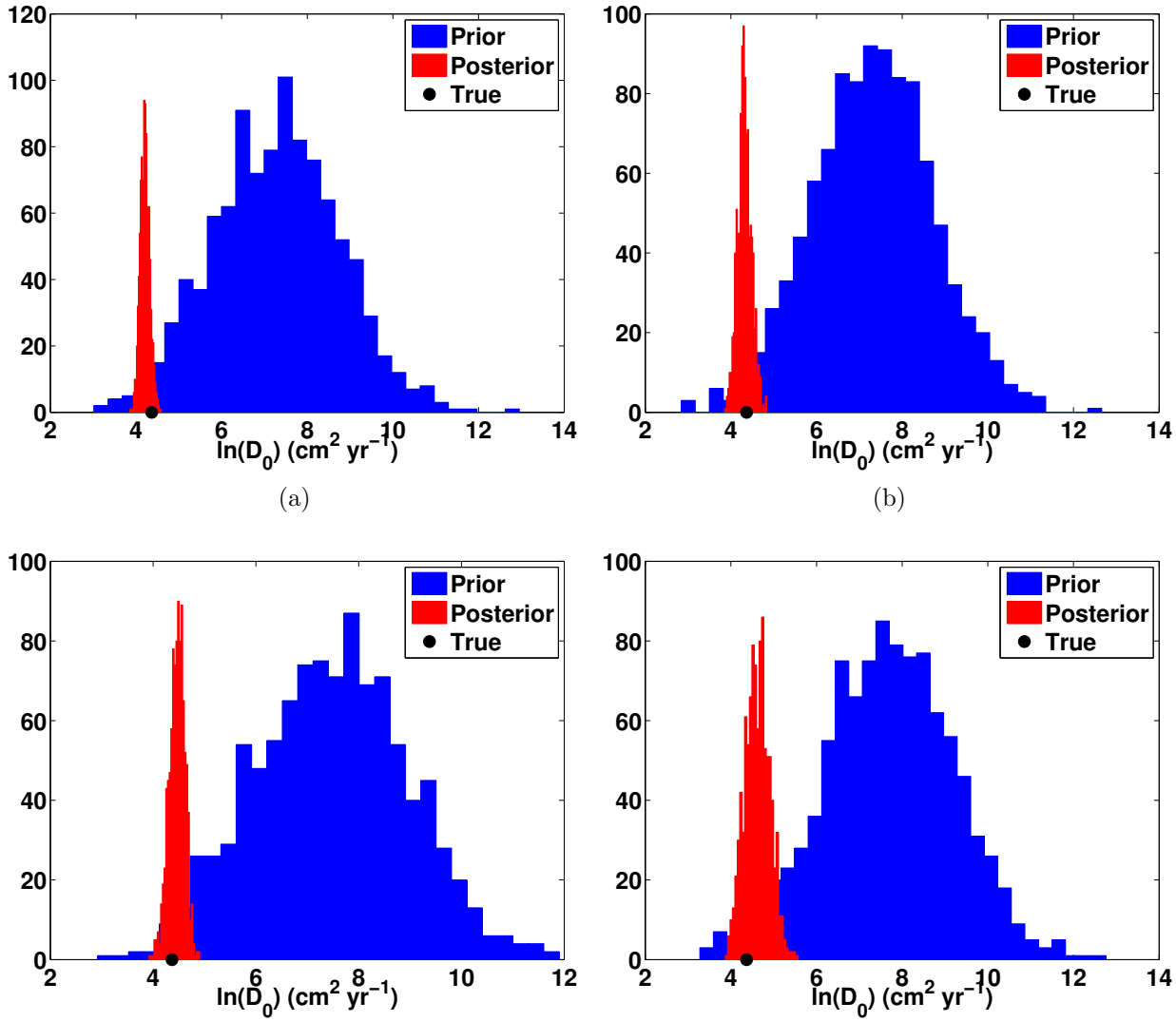


Figure 3.41: Comparison of prior and posterior distributions of D_0 for the nonlinear random synthetic cases. (a) is a random example from the distribution 0.05 g kg^{-1} = σ^2, 0 years = T, (b) is a random example from the distribution 0.05 g kg^{-1} = σ^2, 6000 years = T, (c) is a random example from the distribution 1 g kg^{-1} = σ^2, 0 years = T, and (d) is a random example from the distribution 1 g kg^{-1} = σ^2, 6000 years = T.

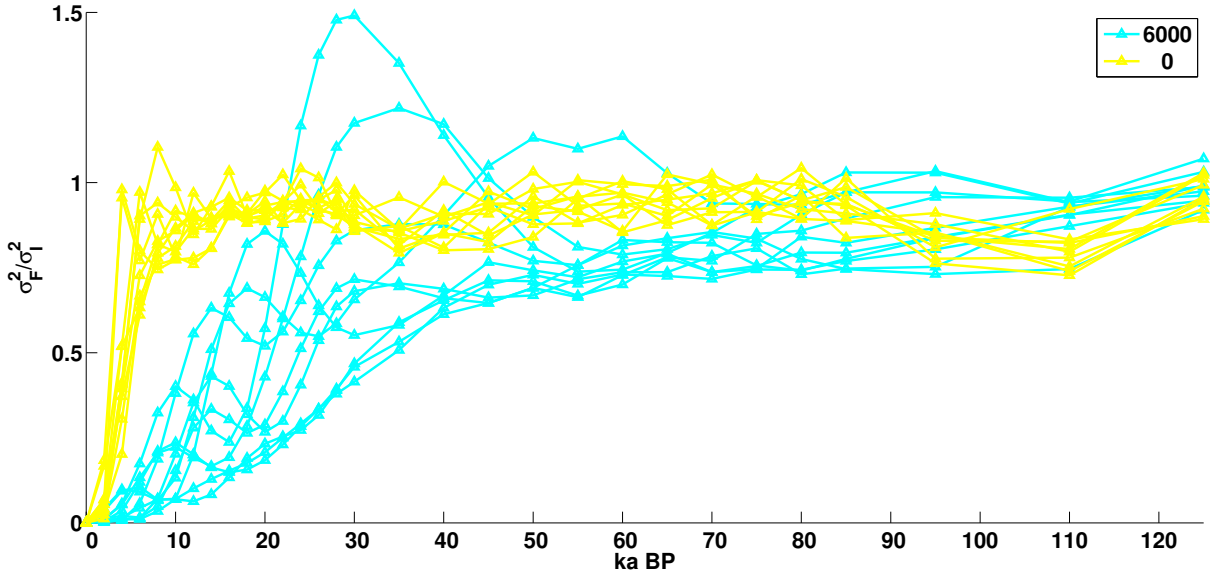


Figure 3.42: Variance reduction in the posterior (σ_F^2) relative to the prior (σ_I^2) for random synthetic cases drawn from the distribution 1 g kg^{-1}=σ^2, and both 0 and 6000 years = T

dition salinity node at 4K BP has two peaks. There is a strong cross correlation between the values of these two parameters (not shown). In cases such as these the mean of the distributions is not a good descriptor of the best estimate for these two parameters. These double peaked distributions arise because the data is not a strong constraint on the solution without knowledge of the diffusion coefficient as well.

Figure 3.43 illustrates a promising point about the initial condition parameters, which is that the top three initial condition nodes are strongly resolved by the synthetic data. The fourth (bottom) initial condition posterior, however, is almost identical to its prior. The histograms for the intial conditions in this case are very similar to those in the cases that have well-resolved diffusion coefficients. We do not particularly care about recovering the initial conditions, but at the same time we want to avoid arbitrarily choosing an initial condition that has a strong influence on the boundary condition time series that is recovered. For this reason it is a promising sign that the initial condition is recovered fairly well in these examples. In these synthetic examples, the true initial condition is a vertical line. The measured data after 125,000 years of boundary forcing retain much of this vertical line. Thus, the data has many points that constrain the initial condition. Because there are many points that define the straight line in the data, these synthetic cases may be especially skilled at retaining information about the initial condition.

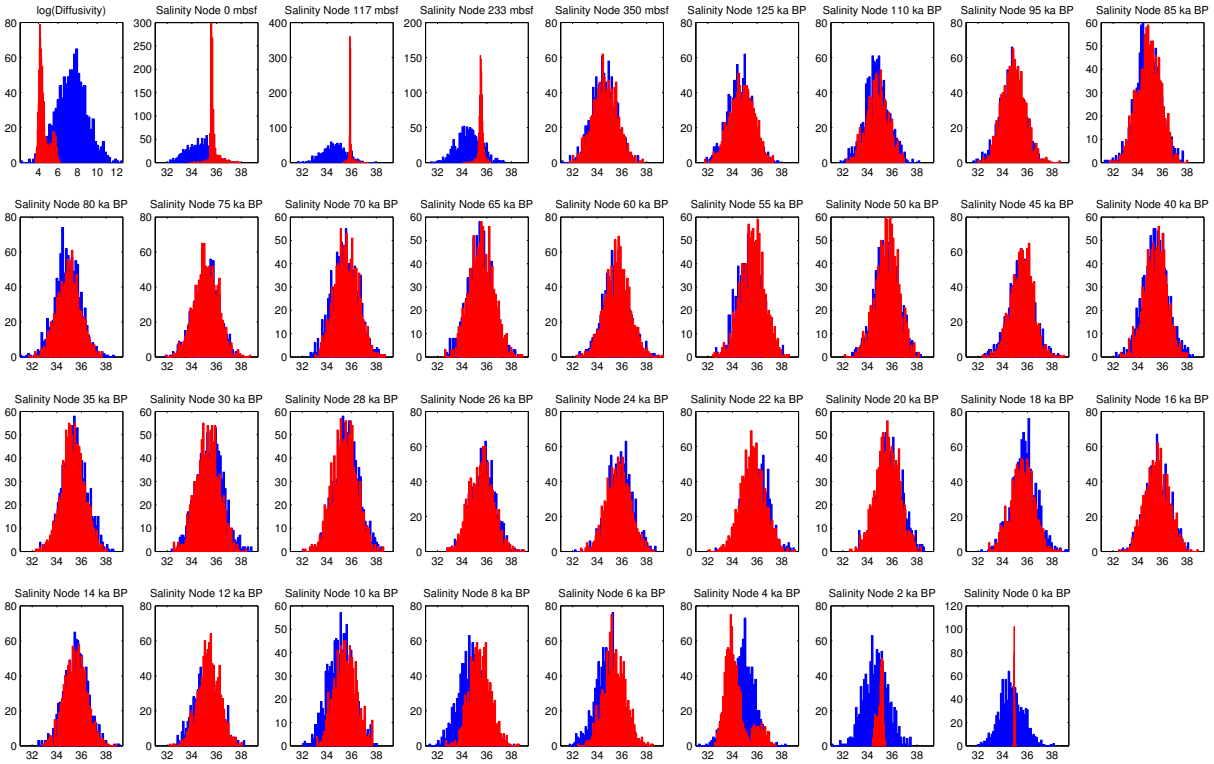


Figure 3.43: Comparison of prior (blue) and posterior (red) marginals for a random synthetic drawn from the distribution $1{=}\sigma^2$, and both 0 years = T

3.3.2 Real data

We have demonstrated through the synthetic examples that reconstruction of the bottom water time history using pore fluid measurements as a constraint and a Bayesian MCMC method is highly sensitive to the prior probability distribution. However, we argue that the sea level curve provides a very good prior constraint on the mean of any deep ocean tracer value.

Our major difficulty arises from the need to assign the prior variance and covariance. The synthetic examples demonstrated that the more important of these two is the covariance. Conveniently, we have a better idea of what the past covariance is than the past variance of deep ocean tracer values. At an absolute minimum, T = 1000 years. More likely values for T for everywhere expect the northernmost N. Atlantic are 2000-5000 years.

To recover the past bottom water time series using real pore fluid data, we sample on D_0 and three initial condition nodes. We found that in the real data cases, as opposed

to the synthetic examples, we needed to explicitly fix the top (sediment-water interface) boundary condition to be equal to the oldest boundary condition, as otherwise it was able to take on unrealistic values. At z=L, the bottom of the spatial integration domain, we assign a gradient boundary. The boundary condition at z=L is chosen by computing the slope of the bottom measured values. When there is data below 150 meters, we compute this gradient using those points below 150 meters. Otherwise we take the bottommost five points and compute their slope with depth. The length of the spatial domain in all of the following cases is 350 meters. In some cases, as will be demonstrated, there are no data constraints below 150 meters, particularly in δ^{18}O measurements.

Figure 3.44 is a compilation of the mean posterior δ^{18}O recovered at our sites using extreme values in the prior of σ^2 and T. $\sigma^2 = 0.2‰$ and $\sigma^2 = 0.05$ g kg^{-1} represent modern-like ocean spread in δ^{18}O and S respectively, while $\sigma^2 = 1$ is one to two orders of magnitude larger in order to allow very different solutions into our set. The general shape of the histories is closely constrained by the prior assumption of the sea level curve, however each time node has some independence, best exemplified by the results at ODP 1063 and ODP 981.

The δ^{18}O histories at site 1093 are very similar from the LGM to present. The same can be said for site 1239 with the exception of the case with prior σ^2=1 and T = 2000 years. Generally for all of the sites, larger prior variance allows solutions that are very different in shape than the sea level curve. In fact, the larger variance of the δ^{18}O is not the reason that the mean changes. Instead, when the prior variance on the time series nodes is higher, the mean diffusion coefficient recovered is also higher and has a wider posterior marginal. Allowing more choices of δ^{18}O or S allows more choices of D_0, and vice versa. Indeed, as shown in Figure 3.46, even with widely varying priors the recovered D_0 is very similar at sites 1093, 1123, and 1239. In contrast the recovered D_0 at site 1063 varies by a factor of two and at site 981 varies by an order of magnitude.

The initial conditions in δ^{18}O that are recovered, shown in Figure 3.45, are not very different between different prior assumptions at 1093, 1123 and 1239, but have more variability at site 981. Because of the covariance of the parameters, the same explanation applies to the initial conditions as to the diffusion coefficients. A wider range of priors in

the time series nodes allows a wider range of initial conditions to be acceptable. It seems that the δ^{18}O at site 981 is poorly constrained by the data, perhaps in part because it has fewer measurements than some of the other sites and its full range of values is similarly smaller than that at the other locations.

Examination of the mean is actually only useful when the distribution is Gaussian. For most of the δ^{18}O reconstructions, the distributions are Gaussian. However, the reconstructions for δ^{18}O at site 981 when the prior $\sigma^2 = 1‰$ have boomerang-shaped (rather than Gaussian circular or oval) cross-correlations between several parameter node times and the diffusion coefficient. Since these distributions are decidedly non-Gaussian, it is not fair to compare their means to the means of the other, Gaussian, distributions. Further, in the case with $\sigma^2 = 1‰$ and T=2000, the marginal of D_0, Figure 3.50 has two peaks, one centered on 2.56×10^{-4} cm^2 s^{-1} and the other centered on 3.47×10^{-5} cm^2 s^{-1}. Thus the mean is a poor descriptor of the typical diffusion coefficient in some cases. The marginal of the 2ka BP node also has two peaks, which explains the wild approach to the present in the mean. There are a number of boomerang or tadpole-shaped cross-correlations in the posterior distributions for the case $\sigma^2 = 1$ and T=6000 years at site 981, and thus neither means nor correlations appropriately summarize the relationships between the posterior variables in this case as well. At site 1239 in the case $\sigma^2 = 1$ and T=0, the marginal for D_0 has a very long tail.

Figure 3.47 is a summary of some extreme reconstructions for S from the pore fluid data at sites 981, 1063, 1093 1123 and 1239. The reconstructions behave similarly to those of δ^{18}O in that the deviation from the sea level curve is a function of variance and covariance, and that the outlier cases are generally associated with non-Gaussian distributions of D_0 recovered in the posterior.

3.4 Discussion and ongoing investigations

In reconstructions of past ocean bottom water histories using real data pore fluid profiles, we recovered many non-Gaussian posterior distributions particularly when we assigned a

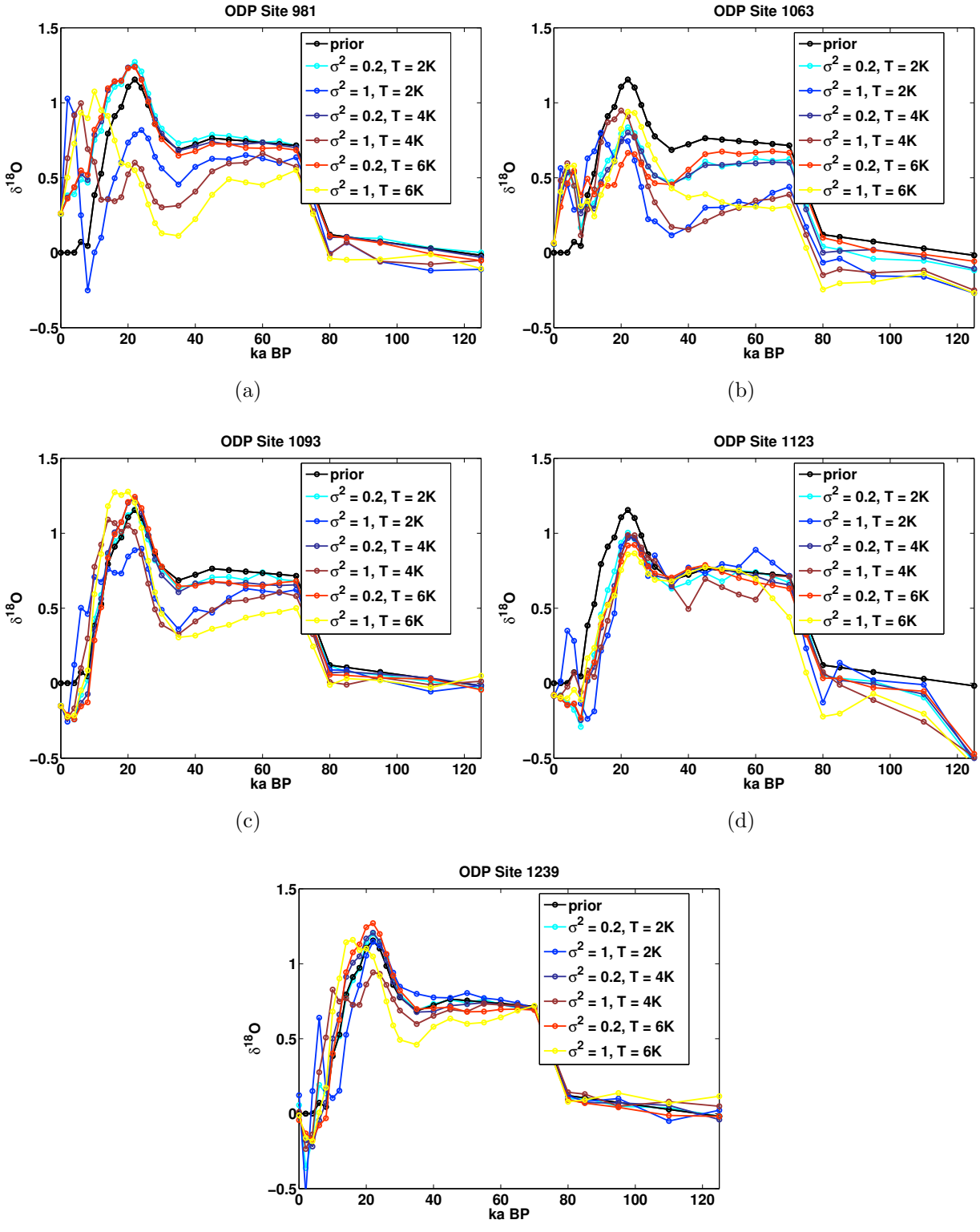


Figure 3.44: Mean of 1000 posterior δ^{18}O time series models recovered from data at sites ODP 981, 1063, 1093, 1123 and 1239, with varying prior assumptions (see inset legends).

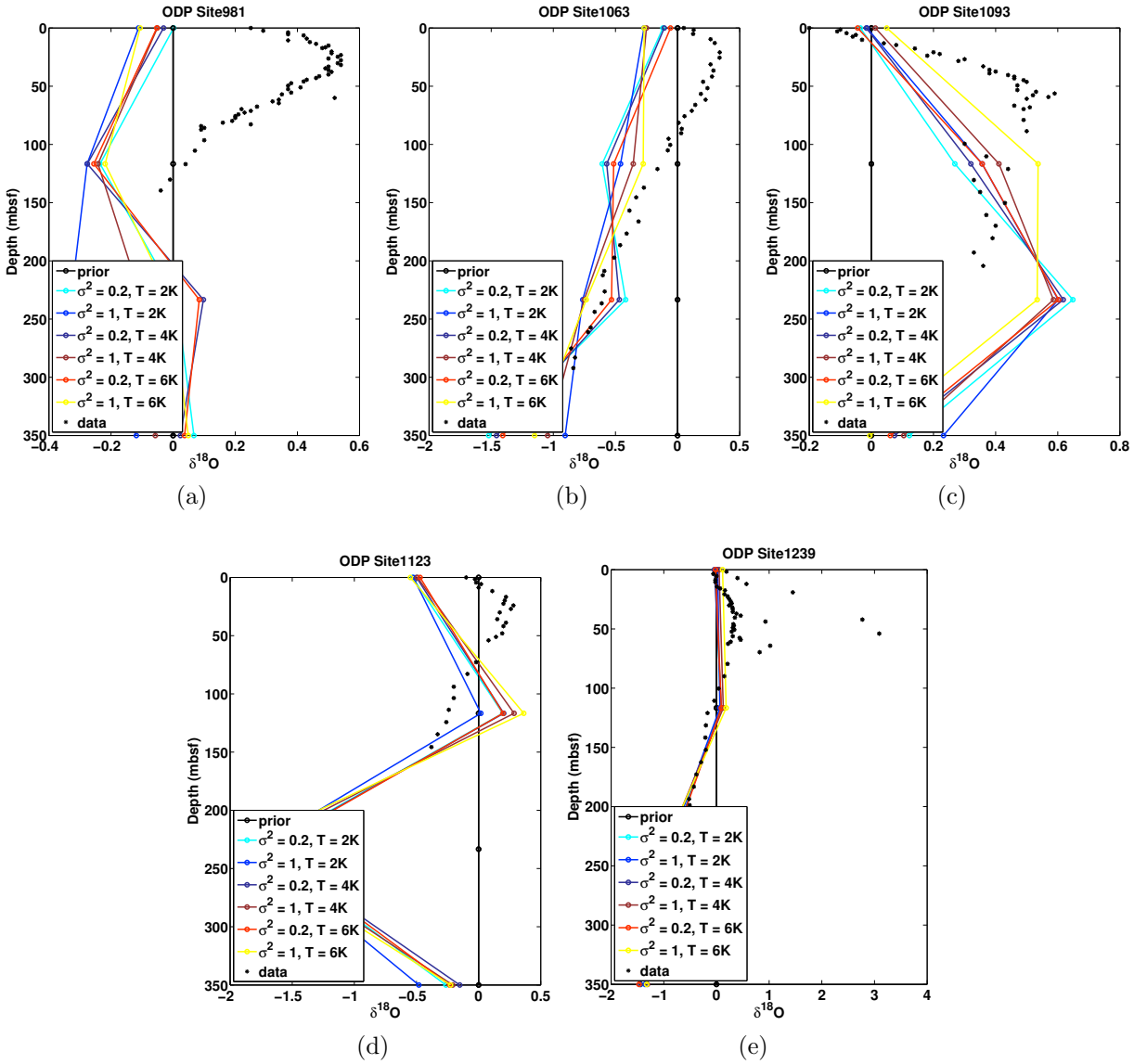


Figure 3.45: Mean of 1000 posterior δ^{18}O initial conditions recovered from data at sites ODP 981, 1063, 1093, 1123 and 1239, compared to data (black stars), with varying prior assumptions (see inset legends).

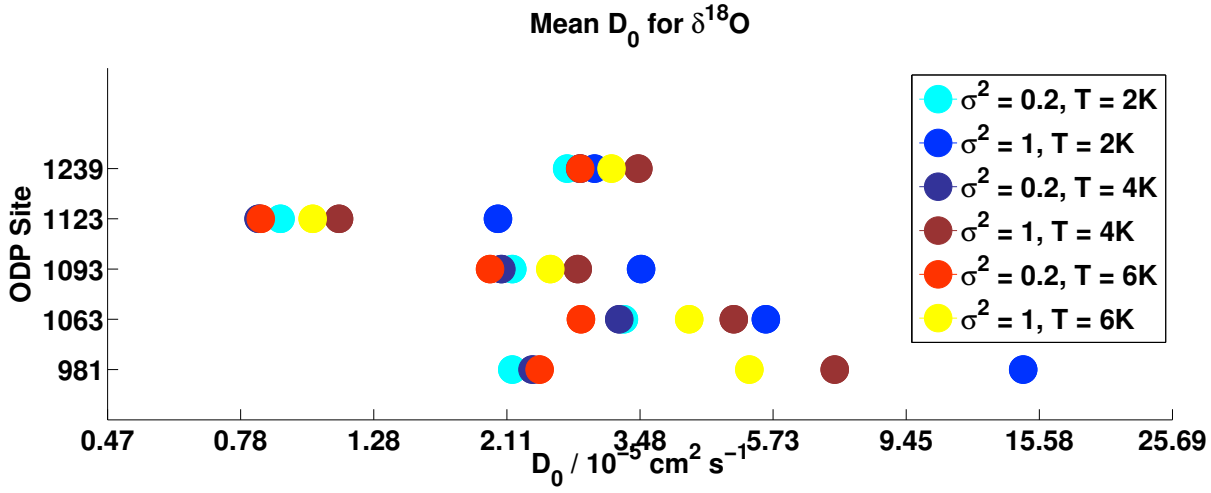


Figure 3.46: Mean of 1000 posterior D_0 for $\delta^{18}O$ recovered from data at sites ODP 981, 1063, 1093, 1123 and 1239, with varying prior assumptions (see inset legends).

prior $\sigma^2 = 1$ for S or $\delta^{18}O$. This prior spread represented the possibility that S and $\delta^{18}O$ spreads in the deep ocean were greater in the past than they are today.

Our challenge now is to interpret and present these results in a way that fairly compares them to the Gaussian posterior distributions. While the wide prior on D_0 did not affect the D_0 we recovered in most synthetic cases, we did see in some synthetic examples that widening the time series prior to $\sigma^2 = 1$ caused a second peak to arise in the posterior D_0 distribution. In light of the fact that D_0 may not be well-resolved by the data alone, we need to re-evaluate our wide prior and consider whether it is a good reflection of our understanding of diffusivity in sediments. At our locations of interest, D_0 values around 10^{-4} cm^2 s^{-1}, that we show in Figure 3.50, do not agree with intuition about diffusivity gained from experimental data.

The synthetic cases showed that the mean solution recovered by CATMIP is often the best estimate of the true solution, at least when the posterior probability distributions can be approximated by Gaussians. Our ability to recover parts of the forcing time series further back in time depends not only on whether we know what T is, but how long T is. Larger true T, when known, enables us to give better estimates of older nodes of the bottom water time series.

Synthetic examples further demonstrated that the nodes in our time series that are best

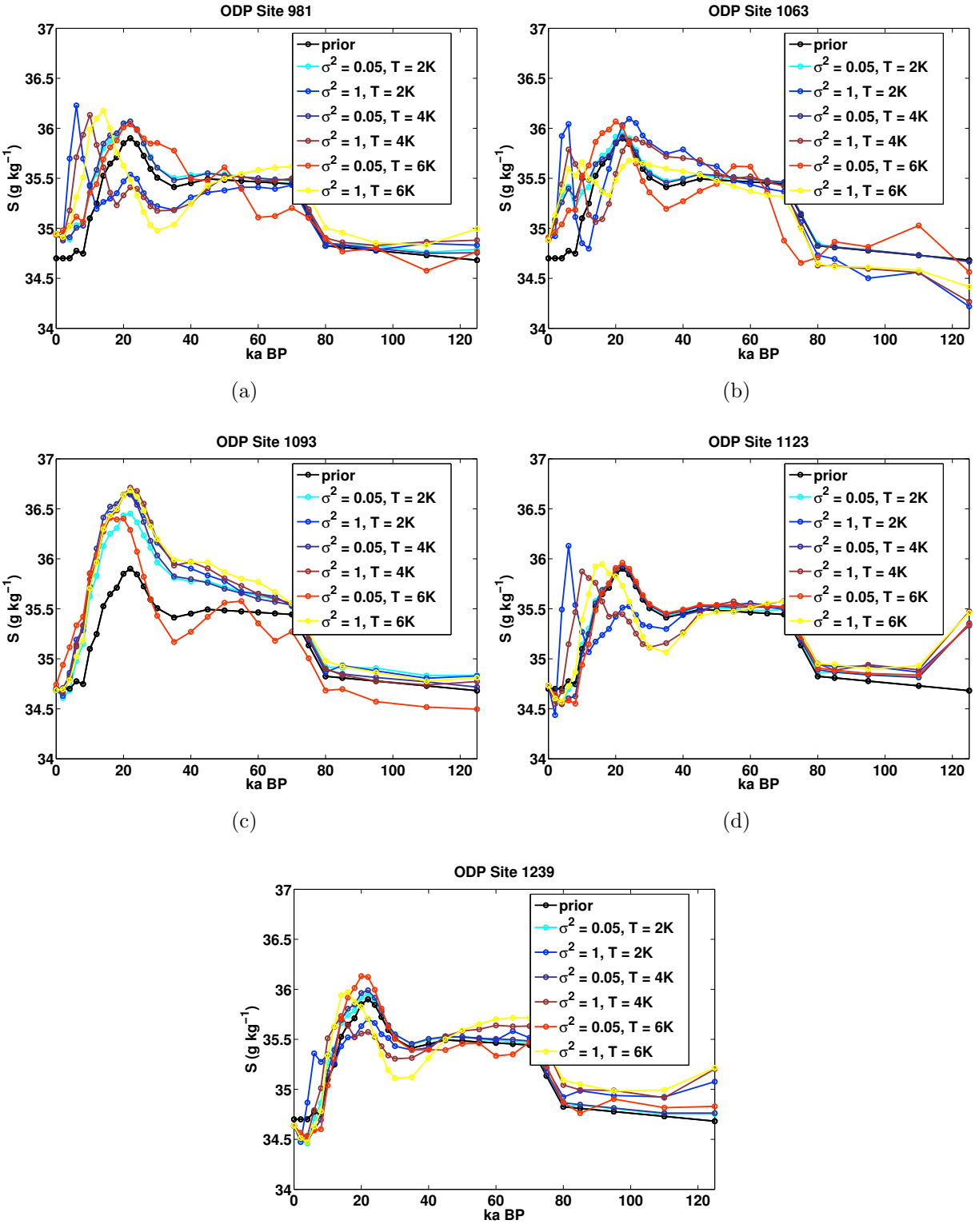


Figure 3.47: Mean of 1000 posterior salinity time series models recovered from data at sites ODP 981, 1063, 1093, 1123 and 1239, with varying prior assumptions (see inset legends).

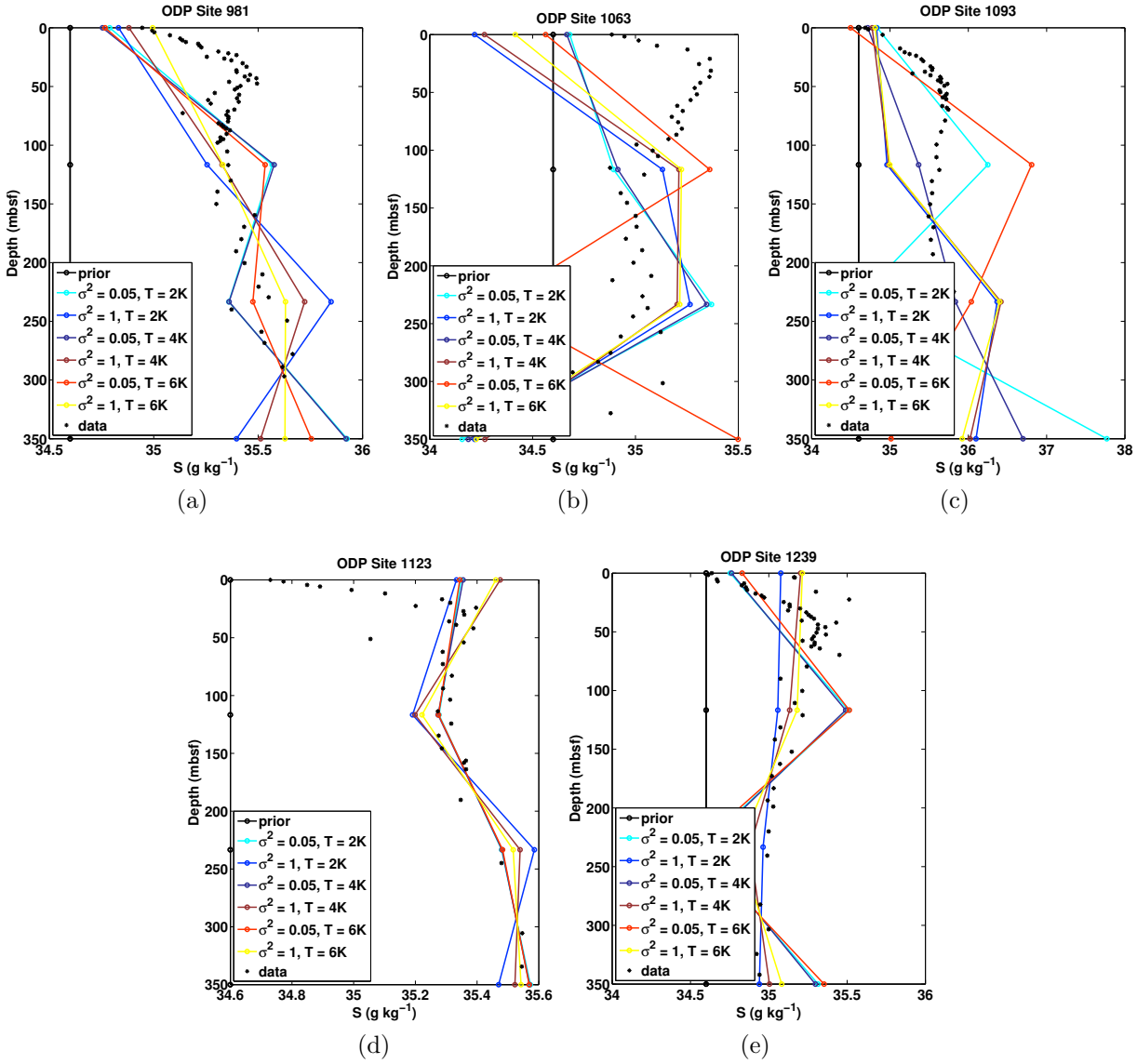


Figure 3.48: Mean of 1000 posterior salinity initial conditions recovered from data at sites ODP 981, 1063, 1093, 1123 and 1239, compared to data (black stars), with varying prior assumptions (see inset legends).

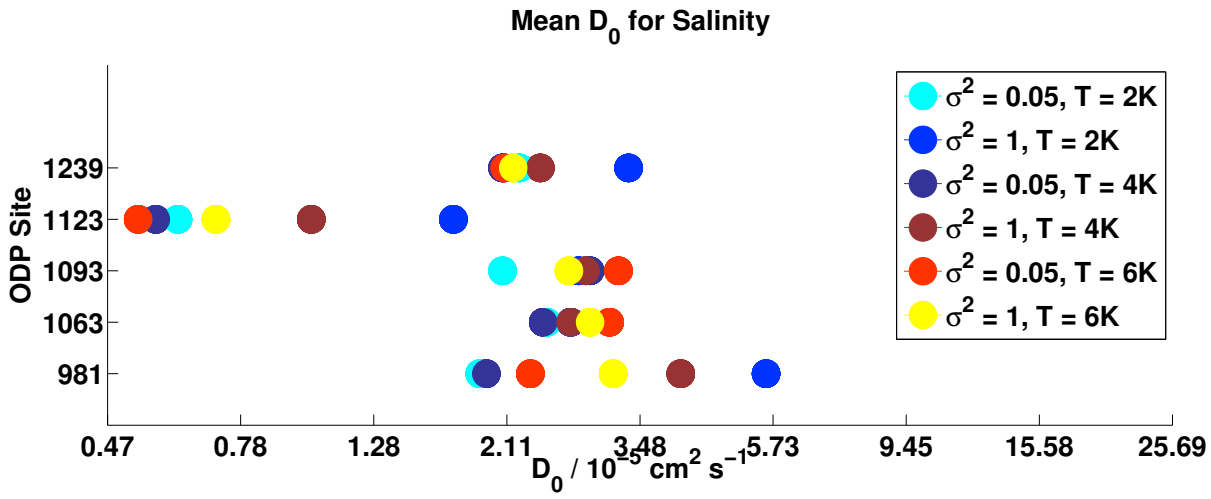


Figure 3.49: Mean of 1000 posterior D_0 for salinity recovered from data at sites ODP 981, 1063, 1093, 1123 and 1239, with varying prior assumptions (see inset legends).

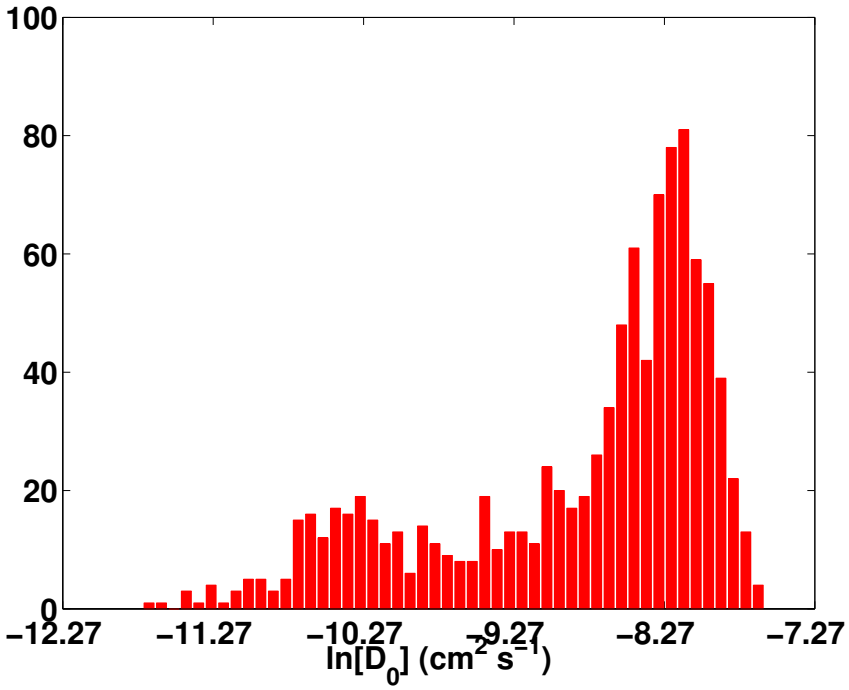


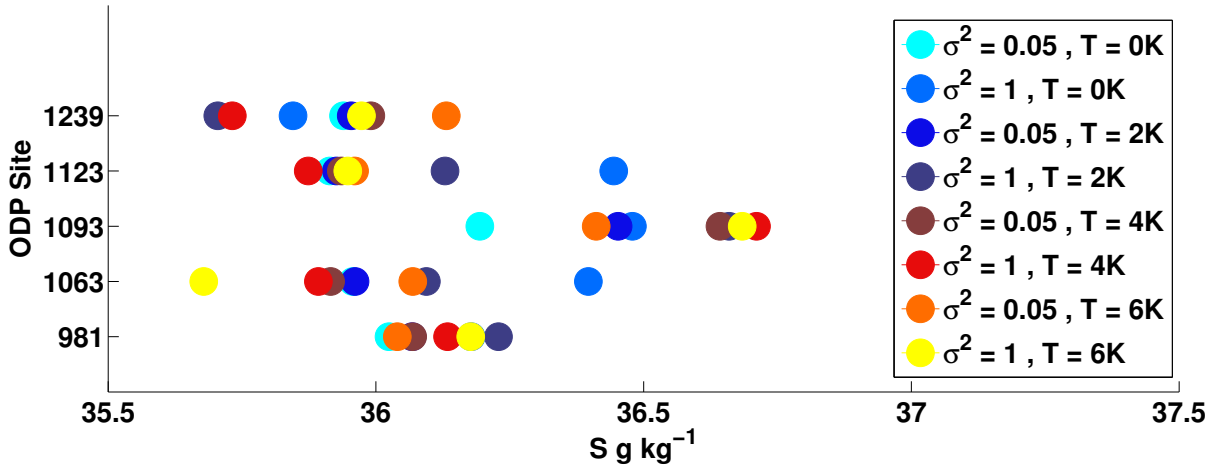
Figure 3.50: Marginal posterior distribution for D_0 of $\delta^{18}O$ at Site 981 with the prior assumptions of $\sigma_I^2 = 1$ ‰ and T = 2000 years.

resolved by the data fall roughly within the most recent 10,000 years before present. We are certain that there is very little additional information (beyond the information encapsulated in the prior) that can be recovered earlier than 20,000 years ago. Depending on the prior information we provide, the same data can be consistent with an LGM salinity/δ^{18}O either short in duration and high in magnitude or one that lasted longer and was lower magnitude.

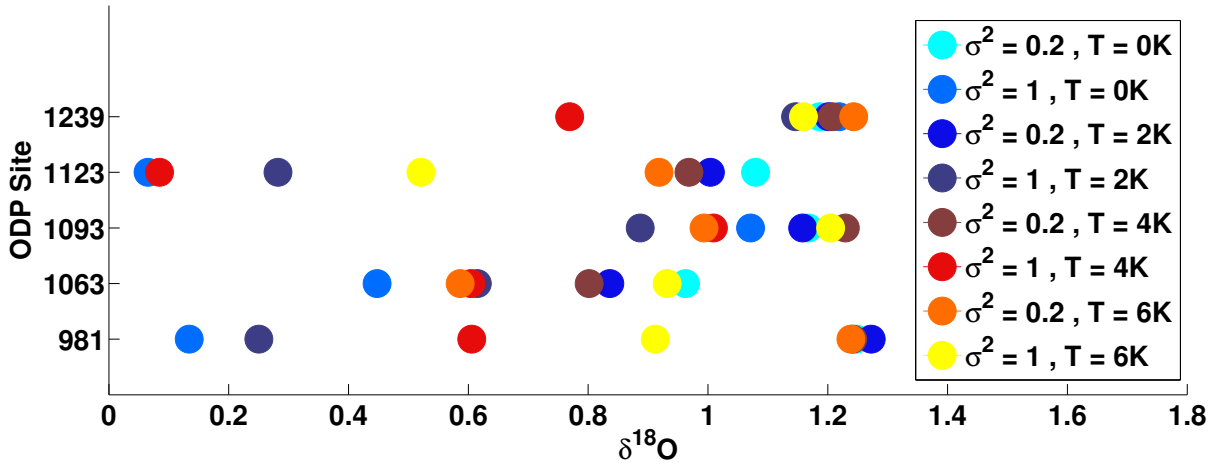
When the prior variance is large, the time series we recover increasingly resembles a smoothed version of the true forcing history the further we look back in time. The smoothing will tend to underestimate maxima and overestimate minima, as well as alias information into different times. However, the LGM values for high prior variance probably underestimate the true LGM values.

Figure 3.51 shows the LGM values of S and δ^{18}O for various prior assumptions. At the LGM, the salinity at site 1093 is always greater than that at the other sites. While it could be greater, the value at 1093 was mean $\sim$ 36.6. This is 0.5 lower than the mean estimate of Adkins et al. (2002). Other robust features of the LGM, irrespective of prior assumptions, are that the salinity at site 981 is greater than that at 1063, and 1239 has higher salinity than 1123.

Our results differ from the estimates of Adkins et al. (2002) most strikingly in the LGM salinity at ODP site 1093. The diffusion coefficients we recover are quite similar to their estimate of 2×10^{-5} cm^2 s^{-1}, such that we can not explain the difference solely through a different diffusion coefficient. We will need to investigate the details of the cause of this large change in solution more carefully, but we hypothesize that the ability of our boundary forcing to vary from a stretched sea level curve can account for much of the difference. Recall the synthetic stretched sea level example shown in Figures 3.13-3.19 produced the same output with a low, wide high salinity in the past as a highly peaked LGM salinity signal. In general, stretching the sea level by a single scaling constant has the effect of narrowing the shape of the LGM relative to its sea level signal. Our solutions with a longer period of moderately high salinity can produce a similar residual signal in the modern sediment concentration profile as would a sharp and rapid peak in salinity.

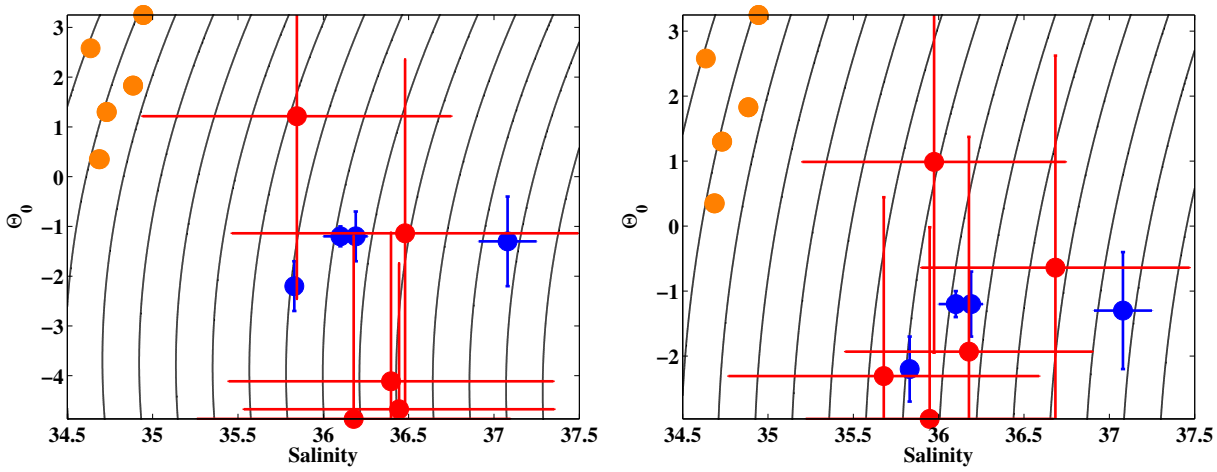


(a)



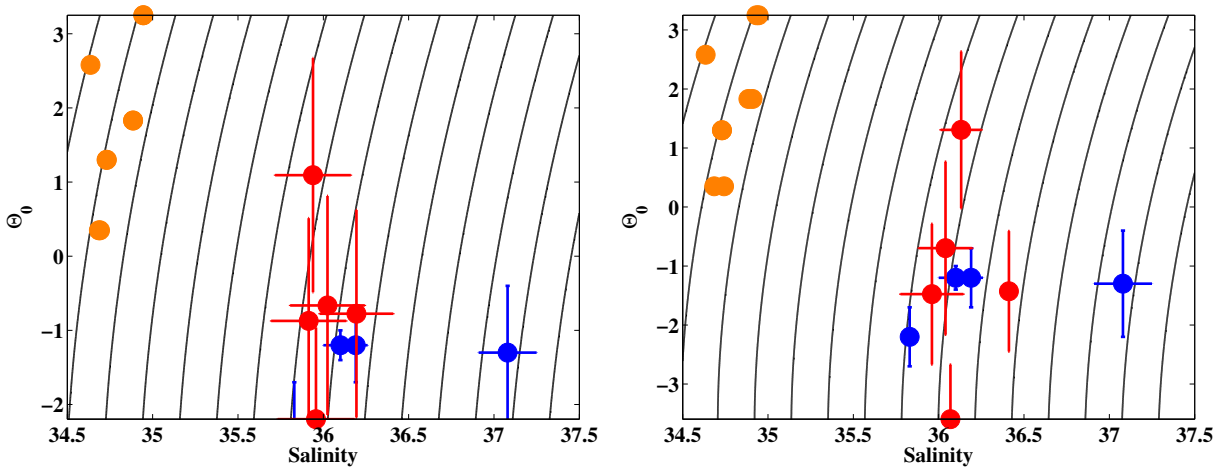
(b)

Figure 3.51: LGM value of (a) S and (b) δ^{18}O



(a) (b)

Figure 3.52: T/S plots with LGM reconstructions using $\sigma^2 = 1$ for both δ^{18}O and S (red) compared to Adkins et al. (2002) (blue) and modern (orange). Here we take the LGM as the time with maximum in S. (a) uses a prior with T = 0 years while (b) uses a prior with T = 6000 years



(a) (b)

Figure 3.53: T/S plots with LGM reconstructions using $\sigma^2 = 0.05$ for S and =0.1 for δ^{18}O (red) compared to Adkins et al. (2002) (blue) and modern (orange). Here we take the LGM as the time with maximum in S. (a) uses a prior with T = 0 years while (b) uses a prior with T = 6000 years

Considering the reconstruction of temperature and salinity at the LGM, shown for different prior assumptions in Figures 3.53 and 3.52, we see that the spatial distribution of density is a stronger function of variance than covariance. With large prior variance, Figure 3.52, assigning a longer covariance does not significantly change the distribution of LGM temperature and salinity. In contrast, when our prior variance is quite narrow, Figure 3.53, the posterior spread of temperature and salinity is similarly narrow, whether or not we assign a long covariance timescale in the prior.

There is a great deal of variability in the δ^{18}O reconstructed using this method, both at each site and spatially. The spatial differences in δ^{18}O would suggest that there is a strong local component of δ^{18}O that could tell us about variations in glacier mass wasting through the deglaciation.

The δ^{18}O and S histories at a given site are not constrained to follow the same shape curve, and thus their reconstructions have different shapes. If we knew T, we could use this information to look at the evolution of water mass histories, using a combination of δ^{18}O and S. The reconstructed time history's evolution from the LGM to the present is a strong function of T.

Both the salinity and δ^{18}O histories at site 1123 and site 1239 show a reversal in direction in the last 6000 years that is independent of the prior T, and σ^2 and seems to reflect an inflection in slope in the upper parts of the sediment pore fluid profile measurements. While these sites are both in the Pacific, they are not in the same water mass today, as demonstrated by the salinity contour plots in Figure 3.54. Site 1123 lies in what is mostly Antarctic Bottom Water (AABW) while Site 1239 is in Pacific Deep Water (PDW). The salinity of PDW today is set primarily by upward diffusion of AABW. The average vertical diffusivity in the Pacific implied by optimization calculations is quite high relative to the rest of the abyssal ocean (Talley, 2013).

The concomitant reversal in direction of δ^{18}O and S suggests either a glaciological source or precipitation for their changes. A change in glacial meltwater fraction and precipitation fraction in these water masses would have similar signals. Sea ice is not light in δ^{18}O relative to ocean water, however a large snow accumulation on the sea ice could also have

a precipitation-like signal in δ^{18}O.

Glacier regrowth in the Holocene could in theory cause a reversal in the salinity and δ^{18}O trend in the ocean. While most reconstructions of the sea level curve over the most recent deglaciation show a monotonic approach to present, the error bars on individually dated sea level estimates are large enough to allow for the possibility of a reversal in direction. The approach to present sea level from the LGM is best constrained by dating fossil *Acropora palmata* coral reefs, which live between -5 and -1 meters relative to the sea level (msl). In some cases *A. palmata* can survive until -17 msl (Bruckner, 2002), but this is considered rare enough that error bars on depths determined by dating *A. palmata* are typically +5 m. Sea level rise from the last deglaciation either halted or slowed around 4 ka BP (Milne and Mitrovica, 2008, Toscano et al., 2011), where coral estimates reach less than -5 msl. As early as 3657 ±120 BP there are *A. palmata* samples from St. Croix measuring -3.08 msl (Toscano et al., 2011). The +5 m error on these records allow for the possibility that sea level has dropped as much as 1.2 m between 4 ka BP and present due to glacier regrowth. The St. Croix records agree with records in Tahiti of a ∼-2 msl *A. robusta* sample dated to 5040 ± 40 BP (Bard et al., 1996).

In the mean ocean δ^{18}O, 1-5 m of missing sea level represented by error bars on *A. palmata* sea level reconstructions are almost imperceptible. Using the rectangular box ocean scaling with a modern mean depth of 3800 m and assuming that the melted glacier has -40‰ δ^{18}O, a melting of an ice volume equivalent to 5 m of sea level is equivalent to -0.05‰ when distributed over the ocean. Then 1 m would yield a mean ocean change of -0.01‰. Despite the fact that ODP Sites 1123 and 1239 show a robust reversal in the mean, -0.01‰ is smaller than the error bar on any value of δ^{18}O, such that the other sites could be feeling the mean change as well. In contrast, the reversal in δ^{18}O at ODP 1123 and 1239 is as much as -0.25‰ with respect to present values. One explanation for this large signal in δ^{18}O is that the changes were isolated to the Pacific. A second explanation is that there is some aliasing in the reconstruction such that the minimum excursion is an underestimate of the true value.

The modern distribution of δ^{18}O, however, clearly demonstrates a local component, and we can expect the local histories to be independent of the global mean, particularly during

adjustment. Adjustments to the global mean sea level are felt immediately at the surface of the ocean, where the water is added, while the deep ocean may not sense a mean change for thousands of years. Surface adjustments in the N. Atlantic are felt quite quickly in the deep N. Atlantic. If the reversal we see is due to a glacier regrowth, the signal is unlikely to originate from the N. Atlantic as the effect on deep water δ^{18}O would be first felt there before propagating to the Pacfic. Instead we propose that we see something that is either limited to the Pacific or that originates in the Pacific. The signal we see in the Pacific could be still propagating to the Atlantic today with a few thousand year lag.

The timing of the salinity and δ^{18}O trend reversal in the Pacific cores may not correspond to the timing of their forcing. We could be seeing the adjustment of the Pacific after Meltwater pulse 1-A or 1-B. As the Pacific is thought to have the most inertia of all the ocean basins, the meltwater pulses would take the longest time both to reach and to leave the Pacific sites.

Glacier regrowth would remove water from the ocean and increase the mean ocean salinity and δ^{18}O. However, our reconstructions of bottom water salinity and δ^{18}O in the Atlantic do not show concrete evidence of either of these scenarios, which indicates the process is concentrated in the Pacific or that the effects are felt most strongly in SAMW and AAIW formation in the Pacific. Thus, we expect that this process, either the final surge of glacial melt or the glacier regrowth happened in the Antarctic Ice Sheet.

Recent studies of the formation of Subantarctic Mode Water (SAMW) and Antarctic Intermediate Water (AAIW) suggest that the formation of these two water masses is zonally asymmetric, and happens predominantly in the Pacific sector of the Southern Ocean (Sallée et al., 2010, Hartin et al., 2011). SAMW formation is driven by wintertime deep convection, and the densest classes of SAMW contribute to the properties of AAIW.

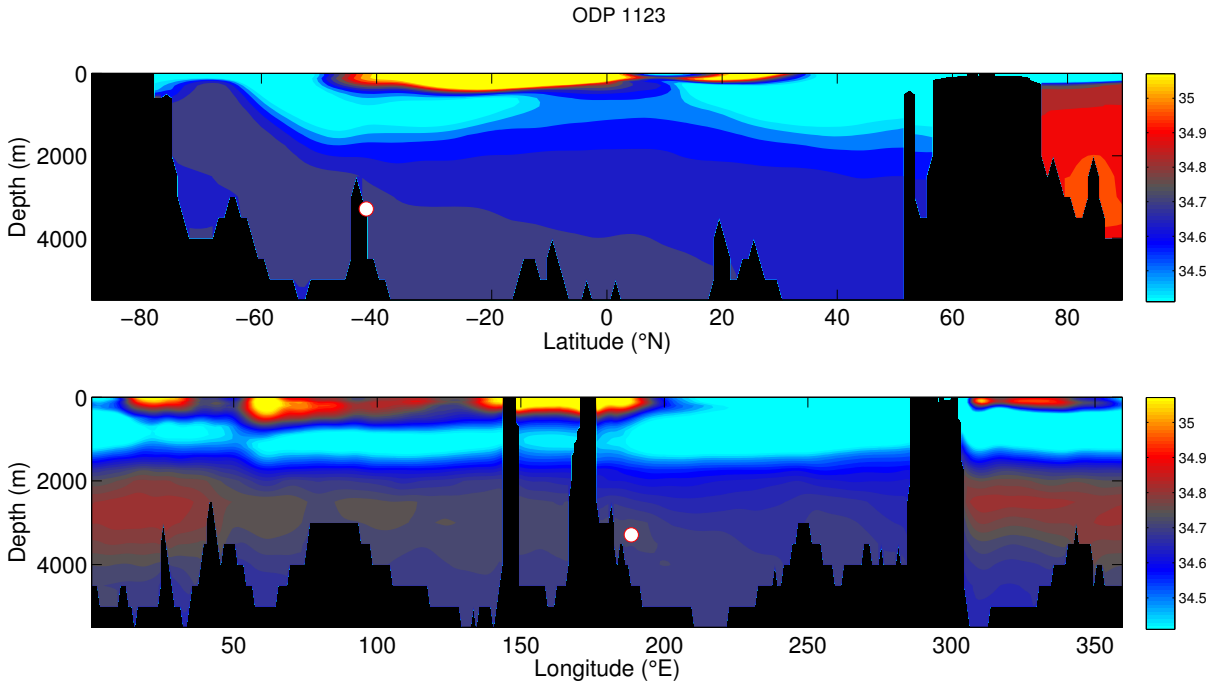
The salinity of SAMW and AAIW are between 34 and 34.5 (Sloyan and Rintoul, 2001). A greater contribution of SAMW and/or AAIW to the compositions of Pacific bottom waters relative to today could easily explain the late Holocene salinity and δ^{18}O signal in Site 1123 and 1239, even without any change in their salinities.

We may be seeing a shift of a front in the Pacific sector of the Southern Ocean. The

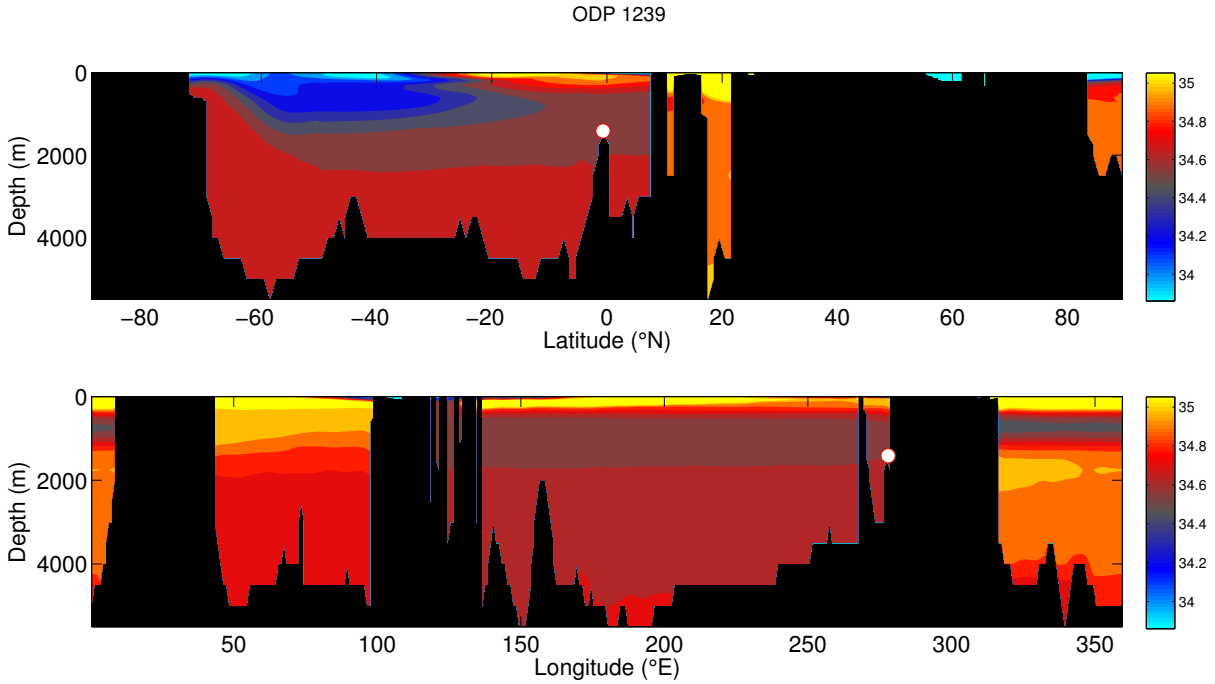
exact position of iceberg melt is poorly constrained (Tournadre et al., 2012), but icebergs are seldom found north of 60°S in the South Pacific. This contrasts with the S. Atlantic in which icebergs are found as far north as 45°S. The Polar and Subantarctic fronts in the S. Pacific are southward of their positions in the Indian and Atlantic Ocean. A poleward contraction of the ACC fronts could shift the position of the fresh meltwater input southward. Water subducted as Subantarctic Mode Water would thus become saltier. The transport of Subantarctic Mode Water today goes through the Pacific before returning to the Atlantic. Before returning to the Atlantic, the signal may mix out throughout the Pacific basin, which is a very large volume of water. Alternatively, if the lag between Pacific and Atlantic is several thousand years long, the salinification of SAMW due to glacial regrowth may be just being felt now in the Atlantic deep water. If the signal we see in the Pacific sites is a shift in circumpolar fronts, that could explain differences between 1093 and 1123 because 1123 is farther north than 1093.

3.5 Conclusions

The distributions of the bottom water time series solutions that we recover from the pore fluid profiles are highly sensitive to our prior assumptions, reflecting the ill-posed nature of an inverse diffusion problem. Bayesian MCMC methods allow us to explicitly describe our prior biases and uncertainties in physical terms and are additionally much less sensitive to noisy data than are regularized least squares methods. Given our modern understanding of the ocean and its history, the spread in salinities at the LGM did not need to be as high as reported in Adkins et al. (2002) to produce the measured pore fluid profiles. We show that the diffusion coefficient at each site is generally well-resolved, but our wide prior on the diffusion coefficient allows some posterior distributions that are implausible, requiring a re-evaluation of our technique. Our technique allows us to reconstruct time series over the most recent deglaciation with high confidence, and we find that the evolution of salinity and δ^{18}O during the Holocene contrasts between the Atlantic and the Pacific. Our method allows us to extract time variable local information from each site over and above the information we have from sea level records. Local



(a)



(b)

Figure 3.54: Modern mean annual salinity at ODP Sites 1123 and 1239

differences can be extracted from the data that differ between the Atlantic and Pacific, supporting a variety of interesting hypotheses about the progression of sea level rise or evolution of Southern Ocean dynamics between the LGM and today.

Table 3.1: Sea level compilation

Age (yrs)	Error (yrs)	Height (m)	Error(m)	Reference	Description
4674	40	-0.1	0.3	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Suomi
4700	40	-3.7	0.2	**Collins et al. (1993a)**	Disappointment Island
5804	75	-6.6	0.5	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Suomi
6368	37	-11.2	0.2	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Suomi
6390	35	0.3	0.1	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Morley
6716	56	-1.3	0.2	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Morley
7102	82	-14.2	0.1	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Suomi
7460	80	-20.5	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF7-4-2
7962	76	-5.1	0.5	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Morley
8124	44	-7.5	0.1	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Morley
8160	100	-11	1	**Ludwig et al. (1996)**	FL-32
8191	113	-11	0.5	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Morley
8363	71	-13.1	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	
8450	50	-21.9	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF7-5-5
8520	28	-24.2	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
8621	48	-14.1	0.4	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Morley
8760	51	-20.5	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	

Continued on next page

Table 3.1 – *Continued from previous page*

Age (yrs)	Error (yrs)	Height (m)	Error(m)	Reference	description
9000	171	-17.1	0	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Morley
9245	40	-33.3	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
9347	70	-19.8	0.2	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Morley
9534	?	-23.5	0.2	**Collins et al. (1993b)**	Morley
9596	21	-35.6	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
9642	72	-31.2	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	
9700	205	-38.9	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
9730	50	-33.3	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF7-16-2
9831	31	-38.3	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
9920	40	-40.6	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
10113	42	-47.0	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
10201	31	-45.0	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
10250	40	-45.1	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
10490	77	-41.6	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	
10575	50	-47.9	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
10673	25	-45.6	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	
10850	50	-53.8	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
10912	27	-52.7	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	

Continued on next page

Table 3.1 – *Continued from previous page*

Age (yrs)	Error (yrs)	Height (m)	Error(m)	Reference	description
10955	54	-49.3	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	
11004	14	-53.9	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
11045	57	-53.4	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	
11090	70	-44.8	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF7-27-4
11280	30	-56.9	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
11495	30	-62.9	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
11530	70	-58.9	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF12-5-2
11590	60	-56.9	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF12-6-7
11930	50	-63.1	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
12084	70	-55.9	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	
12155	56	-58.1	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	
12260	90	-62.2	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF12-9-5
12332	39	-58.9	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	
12695	60	-71.1	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
12710	50	-71.8	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
12800	30	-69.5	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
12818	37	-64.1	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	
12837	68	-67.2	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	

Continued on next page

Table 3.1 – *Continued from previous page*

Age (yrs)	Error (yrs)	Height (m)	Error(m)	Reference	description
12865	50	-72.2	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
12875	40	-69.5	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
12905	50	-73.7	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
13065	30	-74.8	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
13106	81	-69.5	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF12/16/05 #1,2
13129	84	-70.4	–	**Edwards et al. (1993)**	
13465	38	-77.8	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
13700	170	-73.7	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF12-21-6
13746	31	-80.8	–	**Bard et al. (1996)**	Tahiti
14230	100	-93.8	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF9-8-2
18240	140	-112.2	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF9-21-11
19030	100	-120.5	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF9-27-5 #1,2
21930	150	-131.5	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF9-34-8 #1,2
30040	210	-88.2	0	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF12-30-2 #1,2
37800	600	-76	3	**Chappell et al. (1996)**	BOBO-U10
41800	1200	-87	5	**Chappell et al. (1996)**	KANZ-U9
70820	600	-81.1	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	RGF1-17-4
80900	1700	-12.2	1	**Ludwig et al. (1996)**	FL-23

Continued on next page

Table 3.1 – *Continued from previous page*

Age (yrs)	Error (yrs)	Height (m)	Error(m)	Reference	description
83200	900	-16.5	1	**Ludwig et al. (1996)**	FL-20
83300	300	-15	3	**Gallup et al. (1994)**	FS-3
92100	700	-7.9	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Kanzarua Terr. Via
98800	800	-12.7	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Kwambu Terr. VIa
100500	1100	-17	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	AFZ-2
106400	1000	-27.2	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Kwambu Terr. VIa
110500	3800	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
110900	3500	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
112700	800	-65.6	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Kanzarua Terr. Via
113200	800	-40.1	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Kwambu Terr. VIa
114100	1800	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
114600	2600	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
114800	2100	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
115000	900	-84	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Aladdin's Cave
115000	1000	1.71	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Vlaming Head
116100	900	0.36	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Mangrove Bay
117000	1000	-9	3	**Gallup et al. (1994)**	UWI-16
117100	1600	2	–	**Collins et al. (1993a)**	

Continued on next page

Table 3.1 – *Continued from previous page*

Age (yrs)	Error (yrs)	Height (m)	Error(m)	Reference	description
117600	1200	-28.4	–	**Stein et al. (1993)**	KIL-5(a-2)
117600	1900	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
117800	1700	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
118000	2000	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	W. Nanda Terr VIa
118200	1000	0.47	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Mangrove Bay
119000	1800	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
119200	1000	1.35	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Mangrove Bay
119500	1200	-32.05	–	**Stein et al. (1993)**	KIL-5(a-1)
119800	1000	3.27	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Yardie Creek
119900	1400	2	–	**Chen et al. (1991)**	1
120300	2500	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
120400	3000	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
121100	1100	2.72	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Yardie Creek
121100	1200	2.44	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Yardie Creek
121600	1000	1.87	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Yardie Creek
121700	1100	3	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	
121700	1500	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	Burney
121800	800	1.67	–	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Leander Point

Continued on next page

Table 3.1 – *Continued from previous page*

Age (yrs)	Error (yrs)	Height (m)	Error(m)	Reference	description
121900	1100	9	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	Haiti C-1
122000	1500	2	–	**Chen et al. (1991)**	2
122100	1400	1	–	**Chen et al. (1991)**	AFS-12 A
122100	1300	1	–	**Chen et al. (1991)**	24
122100	1100	6	–	**Edwards et al. (1988)**	34
122200	1000	1.73	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Burney
122300	1000	2	–	**Chen et al. (1991)**	6
122800	1600	1	–	**Chen et al. (1991)**	36
123000	1000	3.04	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Burney
123200	2600	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
123300	1500	1	–	**Chen et al. (1991)**	35
123300	900	1.8	–	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Leander Point
123400	900	2.2	–	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Leander Point
123500	1100	3.09	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Burney
123600	1200	2	–	**Chen et al. (1991)**	3
123700	800	1.28	–	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Leander Point
123800	1500	1	–	**Chen et al. (1991)**	32
123800	1100	1	–	**Chen et al. (1991)**	37

Continued on next page

Table 3.1 – *Continued from previous page*

Age (yrs)	Error (yrs)	Height (m)	Error(m)	Reference	description
123800	900	0.7	–	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Leander Point
124000	2000	1.8	0.1	**Collins et al. (1993a)**	
124000	1200	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
124100	1500	2.16	–	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Leander Point
124200	900	0.68	–	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Leander Point
124300	1000	1.2	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Tantabiddi Bay
124500	1300	6	–	**Edwards et al. (1988)**	C
124700	1000	2.3	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Yardie Creek
124800	1100	0.92	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Vlaming Head
124900	1300	8	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	Haiti C-4 #1,2
124900	2100	0	–	**Chen et al. (1991)**	29
125000	3800	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
125100	1000	8	–	**Bard et al. (1990b,a)**	AFM3 #1,2
125100	1300	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
125400	900	1.83	–	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Rottnest Is.
125400	1100	0.92	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Vlaming Head
125400	1100	1.79	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Mangrove Bay
125500	800	0.45	–	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Rottnest Is.

Continued on next page

Table 3.1 – *Continued from previous page*

Age (yrs)	Error (yrs)	Height (m)	Error(m)	Reference	description
125700	900	-101.1	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Aladdin's cave
126000	800	2.43	–	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Rottnest Is.
126200	800	1.77	–	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Rottnest Is.
126600	900	2.16	–	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Leander Point
126800	1000	2.37	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	
126800	2300	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	Yardie Creek
127000	2100	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
127200	1500	1	0	**Chen et al. (1991)**	22
127300	1000	2.43	0	**Stirling et al. (1995)**	Rottnest Is.
127600	900	-104.2	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Aladdin's cave
127800	1100	-1.79	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Drillcore coral
127900	1200	1	0	**Chen et al. (1991)**	19
128100	900	-97.0	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Kwangam Terr.VIb
128400	1200	0	–	**Chen et al. (1991)**	30
128500	6100	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
128600	1100	0.7	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Yardie Creek
128900	1200	-0.69	–	**Stirling et al. (1998)**	Drillcore coral
129100	800	-24	3	**Gallup et al. (1994)**	UWI-2

Continued on next page

Table 3.1 – *Continued from previous page*

Age (yrs)	Error (yrs)	Height (m)	Error(m)	Reference	description
129200	1300	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
129900	900	-107.8	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Aladdin's cave
129900	1000	-107.8	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Aladdin's cave
129900	900	-107.8	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Aladdin's cave
130200	2500	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
130600	1000	-109.0	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Aladdin's cave
131000	2700	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
131900	1200	-34.6	–	**Stein et al. (1993)**	HP23b
132600	3300	2	–	**Szabo et al. (1994)**	
133000	1000	-112.8	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Aladdin's cave
133700	1000	-113.9	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Aladdin's cave
134700	1300	-39.9	–	**Stein et al. (1993)**	HP-23a
135800	1900	-42.	–	**Stein et al. (1993)**	HP-22
136700	1600	-32.7	–	**Esat et al. (1999)**	Sialum Terr. VIIb

Chapter 4

New techniques for sediment interstitial water sampling

4.1 Motivation and background

Chloride and oxygen isotopes in ocean sediment interstitial water, commonly known as pore waters, can be used to reconstruct past ocean salinity and $\delta^{18}O$, and in combination with the $\delta^{18}O_c$ of benthic foraminifera, past temperature as well. As noted in Chapter 1, there are no other methods by which we can reliably reconstruct past bottom water salinity or $\delta^{18}O$. However, obtaining high depth resolution pore fluid samples for chloride and oxygen isotope measurement is limited by the current interstitial water recovery method, which destroys large sections of ocean sediment cores, disrupting the chronology of other records. In order to reconstruct the bottom water concentration history at a given location, we need a high-resolution depth profile of samples: at least one sample every 1.5 meters of core depth down to at least 150 meters below seafloor (mbsf). The traditional way to obtain these samples is to slice off a complete 5-10 cm piece of the sediment core, known as a "whole round", and squeeze the water out of the sediment using a hydraulic press. The pressure in the squeezer can reach as much as 300 MPa, which is well above the typical pressures reached at the seafloor or in the ocean sediments (6000 m of seawater is ∼60 MPa), and the pressure is applied uniaxially. Squeezing the sediment crushes foraminiferal tests, causing them to become unrecognizable; therefore the removal of a whole round interrupts the chronology of the sediment core. At typical

sedimentation rates of 1-10 cm/ka, this interruption can mean the loss of thousands of years of climate history.

For many years the only scientific platform capable of recovering long sediment cores from the deep ocean has been the Integrated Ocean Drilling Program (IODP; formerly the Ocean Drilling Program and the Deep Sea Drilling Program), an international consortium that operates two ocean drilling vessels. IODP expeditions are costly and logistically complicated, and can take over 10 years to progress from initial proposal to expedition. There have been no IODP expeditions specifically aimed at recovering high-resolution pore fluid profiles, meaning that the profiles that have been recovered have necessitated that the pore fluid sampling does not interfere with or significantly compromise other expedition goals.

One way to advance the number of high-resolution pore fluid profiles is to propose an IODP expedition focused on their recovery. While a single expedition could target a specific set of locations, long-term high spatial resolution sampling of the ocean floor can not be accomplished this way. Another route to higher volume recovery of pore fluid profiles is through the use of new remotely operated sea floor drill rigs such as MARUM's MeBo. Even better, we could find a new, non-destructive method to sample pore fluids on IODP expeditions.

In order to resolve this pore fluid sampling issue, I participated in a research expedition through the Integrated Ocean Drilling Program (Expedition 339) to collect samples and test a non-destructive water sampling method. I collaborated on this project with David Hodell, who took samples with me at sea and then measured the stable (oxygen and hydrogen) water isotopes while I measured the chloride concentration in our home laboratories. We tested whether Rhizon samplers (Rhizosphere Research Products, Seeberg-Elverfeldt et al. (2005)), a tool developed for terrestrial soil sampling, can recover water from deep ocean sediments at high depth resolution.

Rhizons have been used on several deep ocean drilling expeditions, but there is little documentation on how these samplers behave with respect to traditional squeezing methods. In particular, it is unknown whether Rhizon sampling significantly affects the concentra-

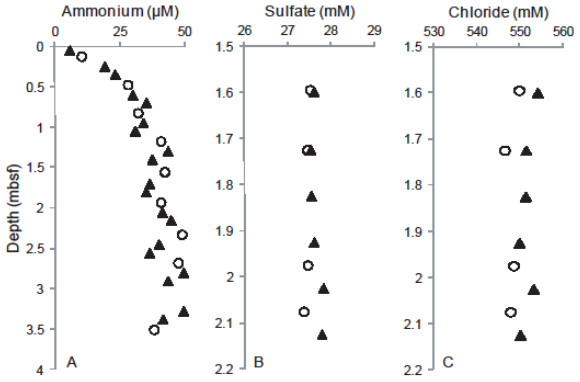


Figure 3. [A] Ammonium profiles at EQP-1 from squeezing (open circles) and Rhizons (black triangles). [B] Sulfate profiles at EQP-6 from squeezing (open circles) and at EQP-6A from Rhizons (black triangles). [C] Chloride profiles at EQP-6 from squeezing (open circles) and at EQP-6A from Rhizons (black triangles). EQP-6 and EQP-6A are nearly at the same location. Note differences in scales between sites. 3%, 0.15%, and 0.2% error bars on ammonium, sulfate and chloride profiles, respectively, are smaller than symbols.

Figure 4.1: Intercomparison of measurements from Rhizon (black triangles) and squeeze (open circles) samples as reported in Schrum et al. (2012). Note that the reported error bars are smaller than the plot symbols.

tion and isotopic content of the pore fluid. Dickens et al. (2007) compared the manganese and ammonium concentrations in samples recovered with Rhizons vs. those recovered through squeezing, but their study was quite low in resolution and there were only a few overlapping Rhizon and squeeze samples (six points). Schrum et al. (2012) made a more comprehensive study of alkalinity, dissolved inorganic carbon (DIC), ammonium, sulfate and chloride. They found that the alkalinity and DIC in the Rhizon samples were compromised, presumably due to a loss of carbon dioxide and resultant precipitation of calcium carbonate, but concluded that ammonium, sulfate and chloride were unaffected. However, visual inspection of their concentration plots, Figure 4.1, suggests that there may be a positive bias in their Rhizon sample concentration measurements, which are again difficult to compare to the squeeze sample measurements due to the small number of overlapping samples.

The sparse nature of previous intercomparisons has limited our understanding of whether Rhizons affect sample concentrations. The analytical precision of previous concentration measurements has perhaps also kept researchers from conclusively finding fractionation. Further, there have not been tests on water stable isotopes. Here we have performed a high-resolution test with >100 measurements in order to better our understanding of the Rhizon sampling effect on chloride and stable isotopes.

4.2 Methods

4.2.1 Shipboard sampling

I procured the samples for this work in collaboration with David Hodell, with assistance from the technical staff aboard the JOIDES Resolution. David and I participated in the Integrated Ocean Drilling Program's Expedition 339: Mediterranean Outflow. The full details of the cruise track and our shipboard scientific results are reported in Stow et al. (2013). The high-resolution intercomparison that follows comes from IODP Site U1385, which is located near the Western Iberian Margin.

4.2.1.1 Squeeze samples

Following the established IODP protocol, interstitial waters were extracted from 5–15 cm-long sediment whole rounds at the bottom of every 9.5 m sediment core that were cut and capped immediately after core retrieval on deck. Standard whole-rounds were 5 cm long, but as porosity decreased down hole the size of the whole rounds was increased to enable extraction of ∼30 mL total to split between shipboard and shore-based analyses. Samples were taken from near the bottom of each core for the upper 150 m and at intervals of every third core thereafter to the bottom of the hole. Samples from more than one hole at a single site were treated as constituting a single depth profile ("splice") using CSF-A as the depth reference if possible.

To generate a high-resolution profile, we took interstitial water samples from the bottom of every ∼1.5 m core section in addition to the routine samples. Small plugs of sediment samples of ∼10 cm^3 were taken from the bottom of each section, excluding the section from which the whole round came, in the upper 150 m of Hole B using a 60-ml syringe as shown in Figure 4.2. Each chopped syringe was equipped with a 25-mm diameter wire inserted through two holes drilled at the end. Once the syringe was inserted in the sediment, this attached wire facilitated separation of the sample from the core and a clean removal of the sediment. When the syringe was completely inserted into the core, and

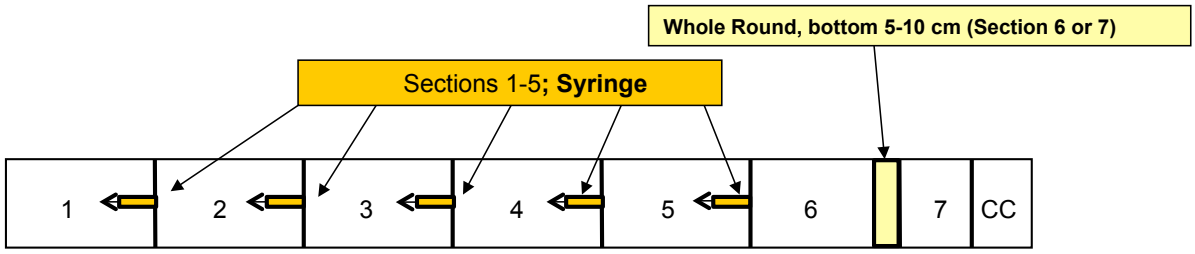


Figure 4.2: Schematic of high-resolution sampling using syringes. Each numbered section represents 1.5 m of core. CC denotes core catcher. The core barrel is 9.5 m long, but individual sediment cores vary in length.

full of sediment, the syringe was rotated before removal to cut the sample cleanly from the section. This sampling technique was used to obtain high-resolution interstitial water samples while minimizing impact on the integrity of the composite section. Sediment plugs were taken on the catwalk, immediately after cores were sectioned. No acetone was used to seal the end caps of the cut cores until after all pore water had been extracted, because organic solvents can interfere with the spectroscopic analysis of water isotopes.

In the shipboard chemistry laboratory, whole round sediment samples were removed from the core liner, and the outside surfaces (∼1 cm) of the sediment samples were carefully scraped off with spatulas to minimize potential contamination with drill fluids. The drill fluid used was surface seawater, which had significant sulfate concentration at all sites; therefore, contamination of samples below the sulfate reduction zone was inferred when there were small deviations from zero in the shipboard sulfate measurement profile. Sediment samples were then placed into a Manheim titanium squeezer and squeezed at ambient temperature with a Carver hydraulic press (Manheim et al., 1994), reaching pressures typically up to 20 MPa and as high as 40 MPa when needed. Interstitial water samples discharged from the squeezer were passed through 0.45 μm polyethersulfone membrane filters, collected in plastic syringes, and stored in plastic sample tubes for shipboard analyses or archived in flame-sealed glass ampules for shore-based analyses.

4.2.1.2 Rhizon samples

At site U1385B interstitial water was also sampled using Rhizon samplers, consisting of a hydrophilic porous polymer tube (Rhizosphere Research Products, Seeberg-Elverfeldt

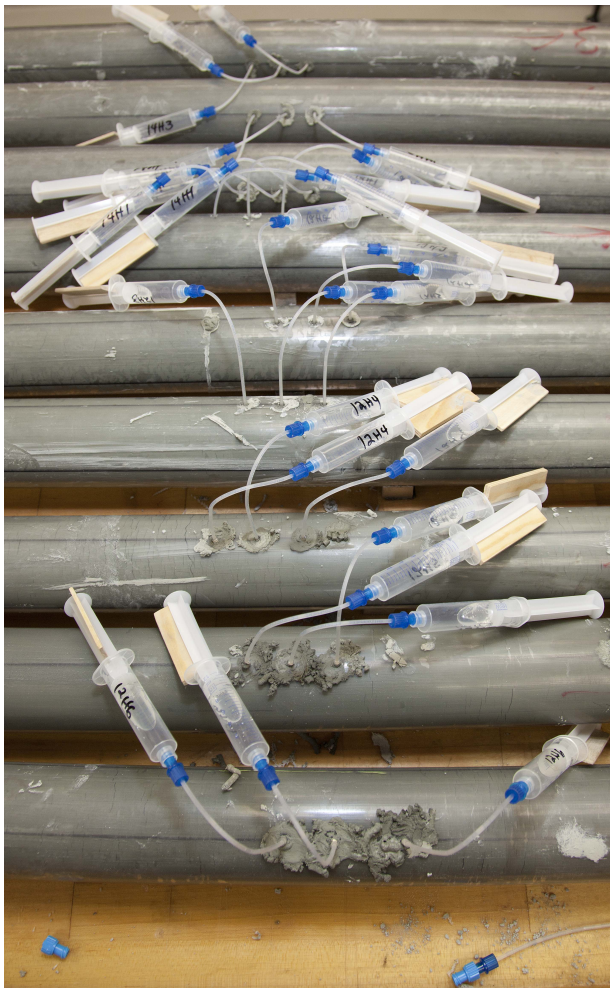


Figure 4.3: Rhizon samplers in cores

et al. (2005)). Rhizon samplers were carefully inserted through holes drilled in the core liner. Syringes were attached to each Rhizon sampler with a luer-lock, pulled to generate vacuum, and held open with wooden spacers. Samplers were left in place during the core temperature equilibration (∼3 hours). The Rhizon samplers were used in sets of three, spaced 3 cm apart, with the center Rhizon inserted at the center of each section (i.e., 75 cm from the section top). The typical arrangement of the samplers is shown in Figure 4.3. Water from all three samplers was combined into one sample in a centrifuge tube and shaken to mix before analysis and splitting.

In contrast to the methods on previous cruises, the Rhizon samplers were used dry in order to avoid sample contamination from pre-soaking. In qualitative tests we found that flow rate through the Rhizons did not depend on pre-soaking. Further, stable water isotope measurements were sensitive to the isotopic values of the solution in which the Rhizons

were pre-soaked even when the first few milliliters were discarded from the syringe during sampling. That is, the syringe was removed from the core, a few milliliters of water was discarded, then the syringe was re-attached and a fresh sample was taken. This fresh sample's isotopic measurement was different than those of the sample taken with a dry Rhizon. Because of the low total water volume recovery, the pre-soaking fluid can not be flushed completely from the Rhizon in order to recover an un-contaminated measurement.

In the same manner as for the squeeze samples, Rhizon samples were archived in flame-sealed glass ampules for shore-based analyses.

4.2.2 δ^{18}O and δD measurements

Oxygen and hydrogen isotopes measurements of interstitial waters were made by cavity ringdown laser spectroscopy (CRDS). CRDS is a time-based measurement system that uses a laser to quantify spectral absorption lines unique to $H_2^{16}O$, $H_2^{18}O$, and $^2H^{16}O$ in an optical cavity (Gupta et al., 2009). The equipment consisted of an L1102-i Picarro water isotope analyzer manufactured in July 2009 (Serial Number: 202-HBDS033; 200-CPVU-HBQ33), an A0211 high-precision vaporizer manufactured in August 2011 (SN: VAP 292), and a CTC HTC-Pal liquid autosampler (SN: 142552). The Picarro L1102-I measures δ^{18}O, δD, and total H_2O concentration simultaneously. Guaranteed precision for liquid water using the L1102-I with autosampler injection is $\leq$ 0.1‰ for δ^{18}O and $\leq$ 0.5‰ for δD. Guaranteed drift is $\leq \pm$0.3‰ for δ^{18}O and $\leq \pm$0.9‰ for δD. Precision and drift are defined based on the standard deviation and range (max-min) of the average values for 12 injections of the same water sample (tap water) measured 12 times, which is equivalent to 144 injections averaged in blocks of 12.

For the present work, approximately 500 μl of filtered interstitial water was loaded in a 2-mL septa top glass vial and placed in the autosampler. Each water sample was injected nine times into the vaporizer. Memory effects from previous samples were avoided by rejecting the first three results and averaging the final six injections. An internal seawater standard (SPIT) was analyzed between each unknown sample to correct for drift. Each value measured on an unknown sample was normalized to the mean of the

two adjacent standards. Analysis of each sample, consisting of nine injections, took 90 minutes. Three hours per sample is required if one includes the time needed to measure bracketing standards. The vaporizer septa were changed regularly after no more than 300 injections. Considerable salt buildup occurred in the vaporizer, which necessitated its periodic cleaning.

The instrument was calibrated using three working standards from the University of Cambridge with known values: Delta (δ^{18}O = -27.6‰, δD = -213.5‰), Botty (δ^{18}O = -7.65‰, δD = -52.6‰), and either SMOW or SPIT (δ^{18}O = 0‰, δD = 0‰). The δ^{18}O and δD of SPIT are indistinguishable analytically from SMOW. Because the Picarro analyzer is extremely linear, it is only necessary to use three calibration standards. The calibration line was determined by subtracting the measured values of SPIT from each of the standards and deriving a regression equation forced through the origin. The slope of the δ^{18}O regression varied between 1.051 and 1.083 (average = 1.067), whereas the δD slope varied from 1.129 to 1.160 (average = 1.147). Measured δ^{18}O and δD were corrected to VSMOW in parts per thousand (‰) by multiplying the SPIT-normalized value by the slope of the calibration line.

Because organic compounds can cause spectroscopic interference in CRDS and affect isotopic results, we processed the data using Picarro's ChemCorrect software that identifies irregularities caused by hydrocarbons. Despite significant amounts of methane in headspace samples, pore water samples were not flagged as being contaminated by the ChemCorrect software suggesting that methane gas is lost during the interstitial water sampling and squeezing process.

4.2.3 [Cl^-] measurements

The [Cl^-] of each sample is measured by potentiometric titration against silver nitrate to form the precipitate silver chloride. Our titration apparatus is custom-built, and we describe the technical details in Appendix A. In brief, the chloride concentration of the sample is determined by the equivalence-point of the reaction: when an equivalent amount of silver nitrate reagent to the amount of chloride in solution has been added. The

equivalence point is determined potentiometrically by identifying the maximum $\frac{\Delta E}{\Delta V}$, where E is the potential difference between the reagent and solution and V is the volume of reagent that has been added to the sample. The addition of reagent to the solution is controlled by a stepper motor coupled to a precision micrometer buret. The stepper motor and the voltage acquisition are driven through a LabVIEW program. After filling the buret with reagent and placing the tip of the buret in the sample beaker, the entire reaction is automated.

For the following work the sample sizes were $\sim$600 μL. The true size of the samples was determined through weighing on a precision balance. The silver nitrate reagent had a concentration of $\sim$0.23 M, which resulted in equivalence points at around 1.5 mL of reagent added.

To determine the chloride concentration of an unknown sample, we weigh out a sample and then titrate to the equivalence point. The concentration of an unknown sample is calculated from the sample's weight, the volumetric equivalence point and the concentration of the silver nitrate reagent. The approximate concentration of the silver nitrate is determined during its preparation, but to have a more accurate and precise knowledge of its concentration we calibrate the concentration by titrating against a known standard 3-5 times at the beginning of each measurement day. Our standard is the IAPSO P-Series Normal Standard Seawater (S=35). Because there is high evaporation in Southern California, once we break the factory seal on a standard, we store it with parafilm around the top and inside a glass jar that is $\sim$1/3 full of water. We use a standard for a maximum of two weeks. To check the continuing validity of this storage method, when we open a new standard we compare the old values to the new ones. We also measure a consistency standard in triplicate every measurement day to ensure that there is no significant evaporation of the standard. Our consistency standard is low salinity, $\sim$ 33 g kg^{-1}, surface seawater from the North Pacific, in the vicinity of Hydrate Ridge. Figure 4.4 shows the temporal stability of this procedure.

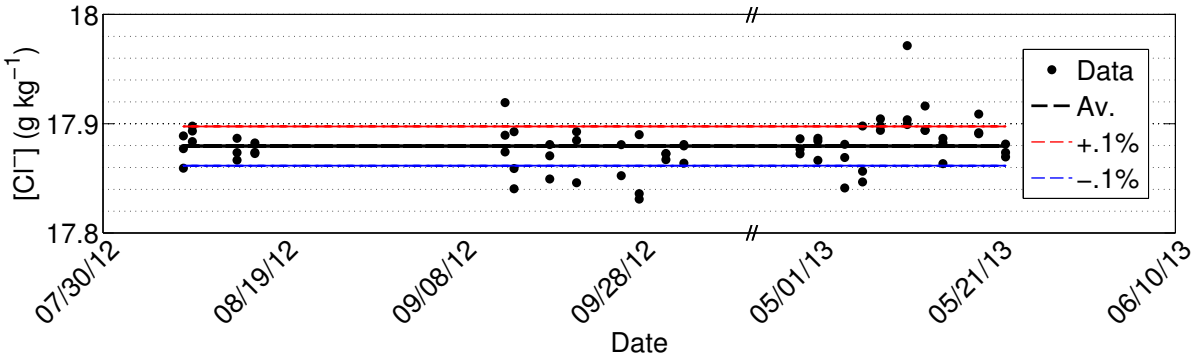


Figure 4.4: HR consistency standard

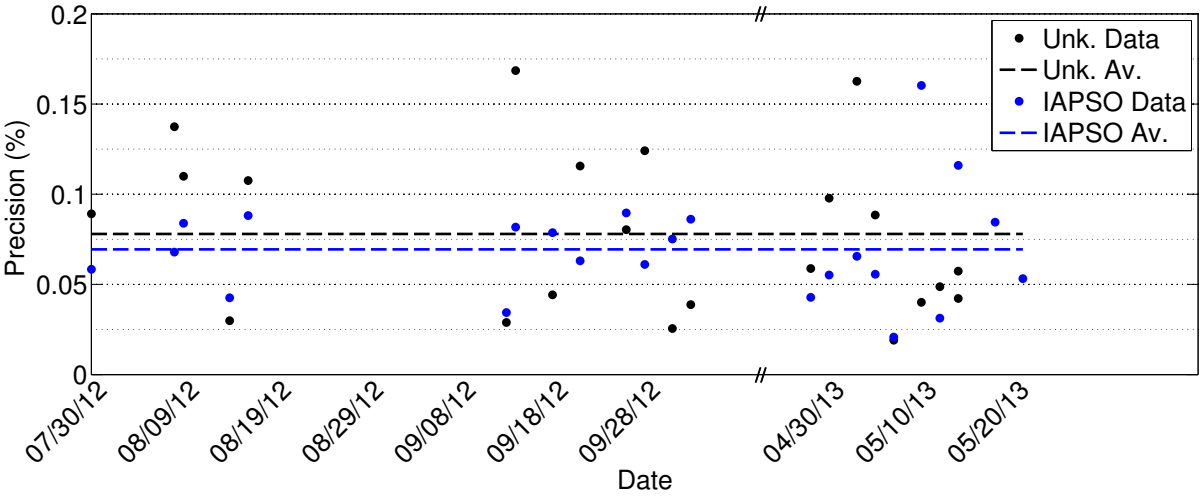


Figure 4.5: Standard and sample replicate precision

4.3 Results

There are two major challenges in comparing our Rhizon and squeeze sample results. First, the depth profiles of chloride and stable isotopes at site U1385 neither have a strong trend (increasing, decreasing) nor are they constant with depth, so our signal to noise ratio is quite low. This issue exacerbates the second issue, which is that the Rhizon and squeeze samples by necessity were taken at different depths. These issues combined make it difficult to distinguish between offsets in the measurements due to noise vs. those due to fractionation.

The problem with signal-to-noise ratio is specific to this site, as most sites of interest show a strong depth dependent signal in both stable isotopes and chloride (see for example Chapter 3). We expected that the signal-to-noise ratio would be high enough to overcome

the problem of comparing values at different depths, but unfortunately this was not the case.

One way around these problems is to consider the population of measurement offsets rather than the individual offsets. For this we interpolate linearly between squeeze measurements to find the hypothetical value that the Rhizon sample should record. We then subtract the interpolated squeeze value from the Rhizon sample value to find the offset. The majority of the following analyses rely on this technique. We note that if there were a strong second derivative of chloride or isotopic content with depth in the profile, this interpolation technique would be expected to give biased answers. However, the narrow range of our measured values makes interpolation suitable for our case.

Another possible issue is that there could be an offset between the reported depth and the actual depth the sample represents, as it is an average of 5–10 cm of sediment. For a straight line profile that increases with depth, the average value would be higher than the top depth's value and lower than the bottom depth's value. If the profile decreases with depth, the reverse would be true. We find however that adjusting for this few centimeter difference does not change the offset trend.

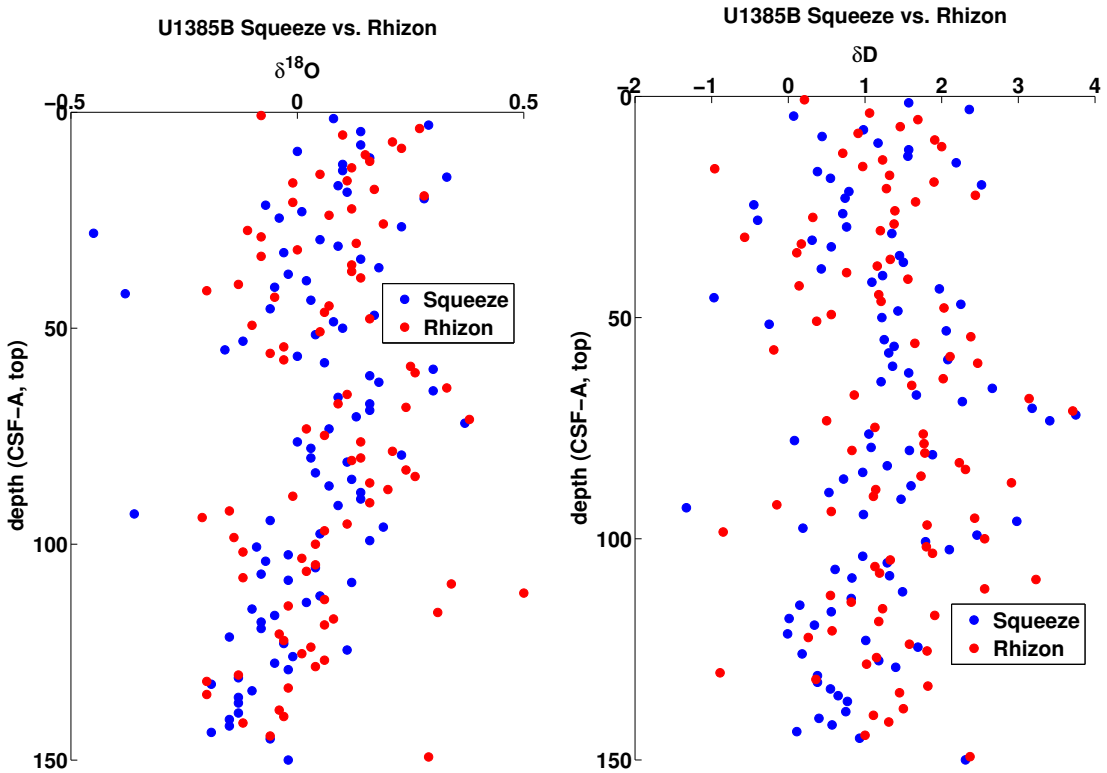
4.3.1 Stable isotopes

Visual inspection of the depth profiles of δ^{18}O and δD, Figure 4.6, is uninformative. Many of the δD Rhizon measurements seem to be to the right of the squeeze measurements, but the noise in the δ^{18}O profile obscures the relationship between Rhizon sample measurements and squeeze sample measurements.

Figure 4.7 shows histograms for the δ^{18}O and δD offsets. These histograms are a bit ragged because the total number of measurements for each population is ~ 100 and the number of bins is 20. However, the mean and maximum likelihood are closely aligned, as can be seen by the location of the mean relative to the bin with the highest number of samples. The mean offset for δ^{18}O is 0.04‰ while the mean offset for δD is 0.23‰. The error in the determination of each of these means is equal to $\sqrt{\sigma^2/N}$, where σ is the

precision of an individual measurement, assuming that the precision for each measurement is the same. With a reported precision of 0.1‰ in δ^{18}O and 0.5‰ in δD and 87 samples, the error in the mean offset for δ^{18}O is 0.01‰ while the error for the mean offset of δD is 0.05‰. As compared to the reported measurement precision, these mean offsets are both statistically significant.

Neither the offsets in δ^{18}O nor those in δD show a clear trend with depth, as demonstrated in Figure 4.8a and 4.8b. Instead this view of the data confirms that of the histograms, which is that most of the Rhizon measurement values are greater than the squeeze measurement values.

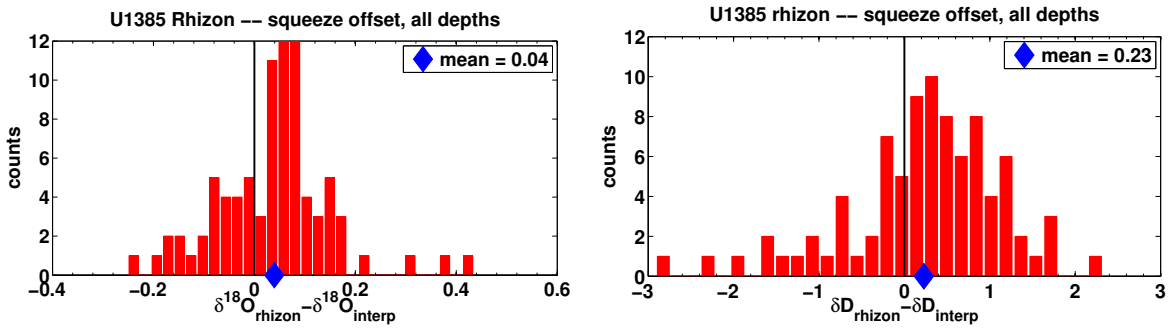


(a) (b)

Figure 4.6: Depth profiles of δ^{18}O and δD measured in both squeeze and Rhizon samples at site U1385

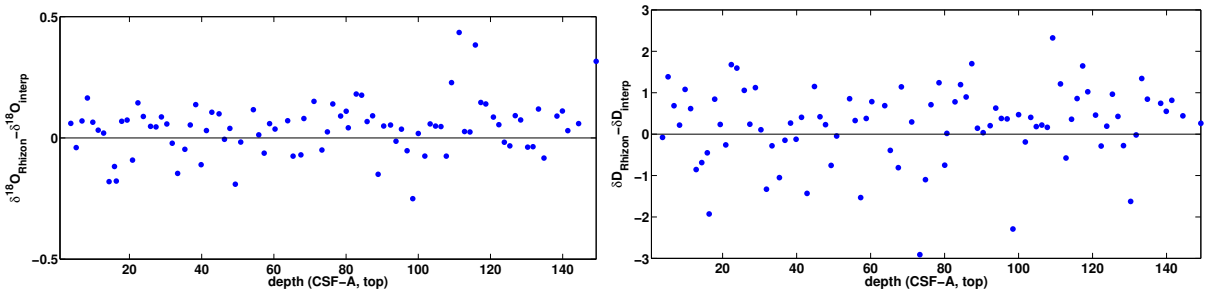
4.3.2 Chloride

In contrast, in the [Cl^-] depth profile, Figure 4.9, the Rhizon measurements lie clearly to the right of the squeeze measurements in the upper ∼80 m, although below that point



(a) (b)

Figure 4.7: Histograms of offset between Rhizon measurements and squeeze sample measurements interpolated to the Rhizon positions. (a) δ^{18}O, (b) δD



(a) (b)

Figure 4.8: Offset between Rhizon sample measurements and squeeze sample measurements as a function of depth (mbsf). (a) δ^{18}O, (b) δD

both profiles become noisier and the distinction between measurement techniques is less clear.

The chloride offset histogram, Figure 4.10 is more narrow than both of the stable isotope offset histograms. The mean and max. likelihood again are aligned and the mean offset is 0.04 g kg^{-1}. Considering only the points below 80 m, the offsets in chloride are almost indistinguishable from zero. However, considering the offset in chloride vs. depth in Figure 4.11, there does not seem to be a significant trend below 80 m. Instead it seems that perhaps the change is due to an inflection point in the depth profile. Or, below 80 m there is so much noise that the interpolation technique is no longer valid. There is no relationship between the age of the IAPSO standard and the offset in chloride, as shown in Figure 4.12, confirming that the signal we see is real and not due to problematic storage of our standard.

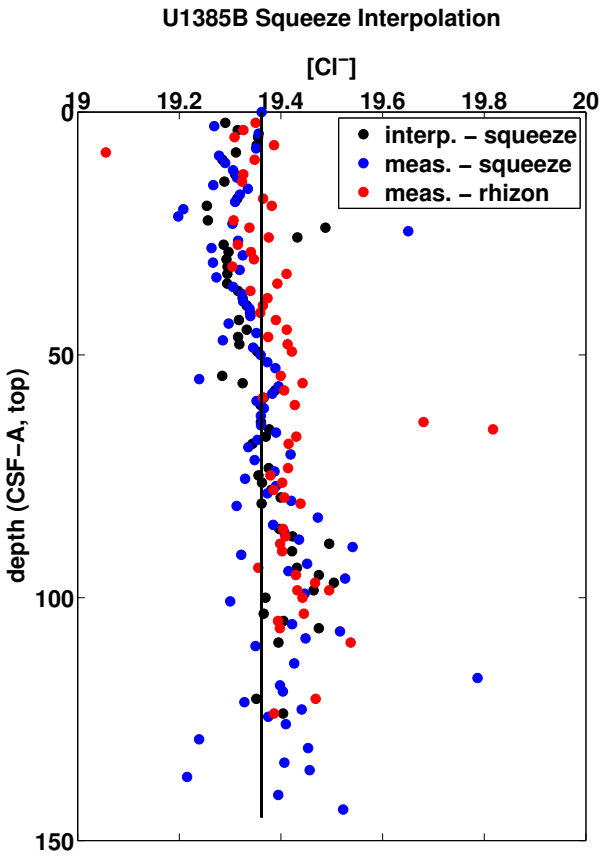


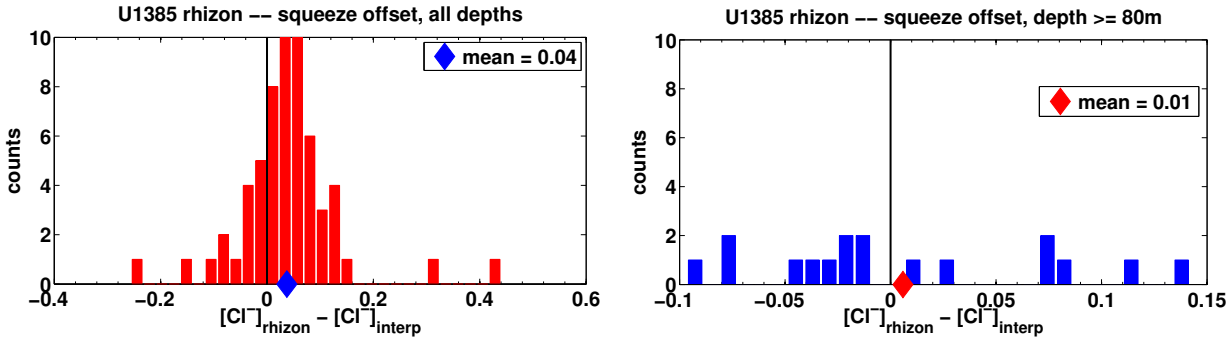
Figure 4.9: Depth profiles of $[Cl^-]$ measured in both squeeze and Rhizon samples at site U1385

4.4 Discussion

There is a significant offset between measurements on Rhizon samples and squeezed samples in both stable isotopes and chloride. There are several possible reasons for this observed difference.

Rhizon samples were taken over an ∼3 hour period during which water evaporation may have changed the isotopes and chloride concentration. We were unable to carefully control for this time, which may be one contributor to the noisiness in the data.

In a similar way, the hydrophilic membrane of the sampler may have absorbed some of the water, creating higher measured chloride concentrations, or caused diffusional fractionation of the stable isotopes, which we expect would preferentially affect the δD relative to δ^{18}O as the relative mass difference, and thus the difference in diffusivity, between hydrogen isotopes is greater than that between the oxygen isotopes.



(a) (b)

Figure 4.10: Histograms of the $[Cl^-]$ (g kg^{-1}) offset between Rhizon sample measurements and squeeze sample measurements interpolated to the depths of the Rhizon samples

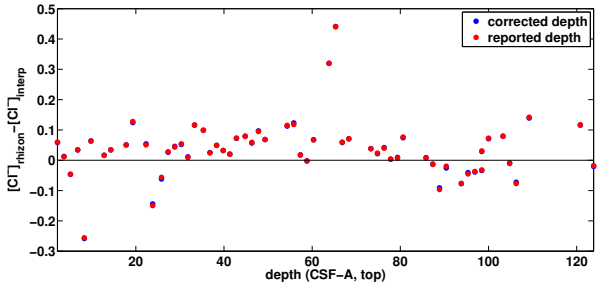


Figure 4.11: $[Cl^-]$ (g kg^{-1}) offset between Rhizon sample measurements and squeeze sample measurements as a function of depth

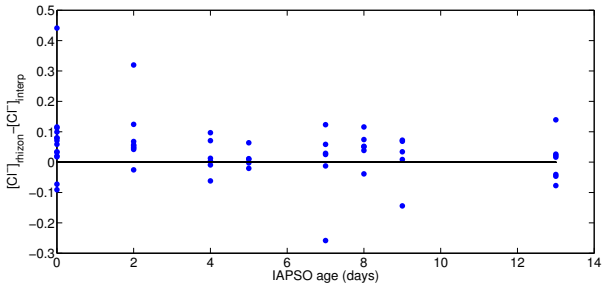


Figure 4.12: Offset between Rhizon and squeeze sample $[Cl^-]$ as a function of the age of the IAPSO standard (days) used to measure the Rhizon sample

Another possible source of the offset is drill fluid contamination. We inserted the porous membrane such that it was within the sediment that should not have direct contact with drill fluid, however, in many cases we observed that the sediment in which we placed the samplers had pulled away from the liner by the time we removed the samplers. This indicates that the water on the outside of the section may have been sucked into the sampler as well. In our particular case, the drill fluid would have a higher concentration of chloride than the pore fluids as the pore fluid concentration with depth decreases

slightly at least in the upper $\sim$ 50 m of the depth profile. This could explain part of the trend we see with depth in the chloride, specifically that the deeper chloride values are saltier and thus a slight contamination with a saltier source has a smaller relative effect on the measurement offset.

Evaporative fractionation has been intensively studied, and there are good theoretical predictions for the relationship between δ^{18}O and δD undergoing evaporation. We can therefore compare the relationships between the stable isotopes and chloride to see if the offset is consistent with evaporative fractionation.

Our case can be described best by open-system Rayleigh fractionation. The ratio of heavy to light isotope, R, (i.e. $\frac{^{18}O}{^{16}O}$ for oxygen or $\frac{D}{H}$ for hydrogen) in a pool of water with essentially infinite molecules and fixed conditions can be described by:

$$R = R_0 \left(\frac{N}{N_0} \right)^{(\alpha - 1)} . \tag{4.1}$$

R_0 is the initial isotope ratio, N is the total number of molecules remaining, N_0 is the original number of molecules and α is the fractionation factor. At 20°C the evaporative fractionation factor for ^{18}O relative to ^{16}O is 1.0098 and for deuterium relative to protium is 1.084 (Gat, 1996).

Under evaporation the fraction of material left, $\frac{N}{N_0}$, is also known as f. f will be equal for both pairs of isotopes, such that there is a linear relationship between the logs of the element ratios, i.e.:

$$\frac{\alpha_H - 1}{\alpha_O - 1} \ln \frac{R^O}{R_0^O} = \ln \frac{R^H}{R_0^H} . \tag{4.2}$$

While the spectroscopic technique used in CRDS does not yield isotope ratios, the ratios can be computed simply from the δ values as follows;

$$\frac{\delta^{18}\mathrm{O}}{1000} + 1 = \frac{R}{R_{std}} , \tag{4.3}$$

such that the relationship between δ^{18}O and δD under evaporation is:

$$\frac{\alpha_H - 1}{\alpha_O - 1} \ln\left(\frac{\frac{\delta^{18}O_{final}}{1000} + 1}{\frac{\delta^{18}O_{initial}}{1000} + 1}\right) = \ln\left(\frac{\frac{\delta D_{final}}{1000} + 1}{\frac{\delta D_{initial}}{1000} + 1}\right). \tag{4.4}$$

Substituting in the α values, this is:

$$8.5714 \ln\left(\frac{\frac{\delta^{18}O_{final}}{1000} + 1}{\frac{\delta^{18}O_{initial}}{1000} + 1}\right) = \ln\left(\frac{\frac{\delta D_{final}}{1000} + 1}{\frac{\delta D_{initial}}{1000} + 1}\right). \tag{4.5}$$

For our purpose, we assume the initial isotope ratio is that of the interpolated squeeze measurement. The final isotope ratio is that measured in the Rhizon sample. The hypothesis we test with these choices is that the Rhizon values are fractionated relative to the squeeze values because they are left open to the atmosphere longer. It is important to note that in some cases the squeeze samples do sit for ∼1 hour in the squeezers; thus, we never have a perfect control on no evaporation.

The red line labeled evaporative fractionation in Figure 4.13 shows the assumed relationship between the oxygen and hydrogen isotope ratios. The 2-norm error of the data relative to the prediction, assuming all the error is in the hydrogen measurements, is 0.0083 while the 1-norm error is 0.0574. The blue line is a linear fit to the logarithmic data. The slope of the line is 4.557. The 2-norm error is 0.0071 and the 1-norm error of this fit is 0.0502. If I propagate the precision of the hydrogen isotope measurements through the Rayleigh equation, the theoretical 2-norm error must be greater than 0.0066 and the 1-norm error should be greater than 0.0622. Therefore the difference between the evaporative fractionation and the empirically calculated relationship between hydrogen and oxygen isotopes is indistinguishable.

The evolution of concentrations with evaporations can be described analogously to Rayleigh fractionation, where $f = \frac{V_{final}}{V_{initial}} = \frac{[Cl^-]_{initial}}{[Cl^-]_{final}}$. Then the relationship between chloride con-

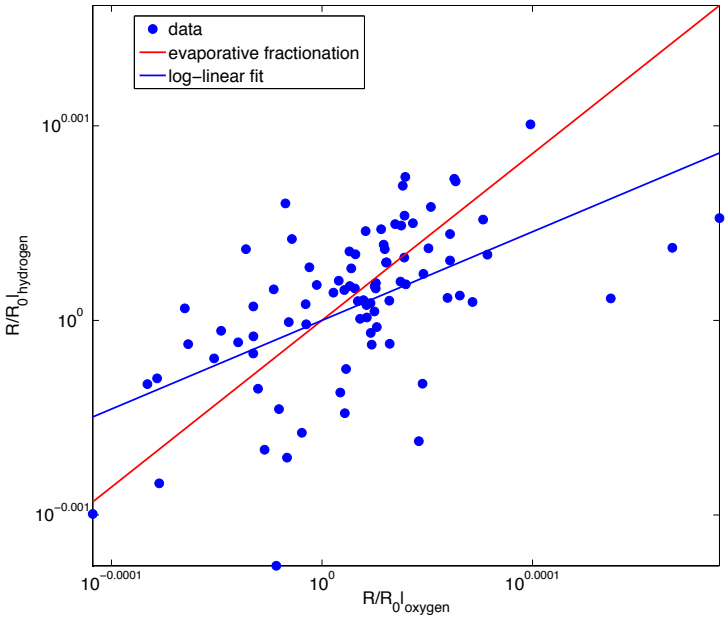


Figure 4.13: Hydrogen isotope ratios vs. oxygen isotope ratios

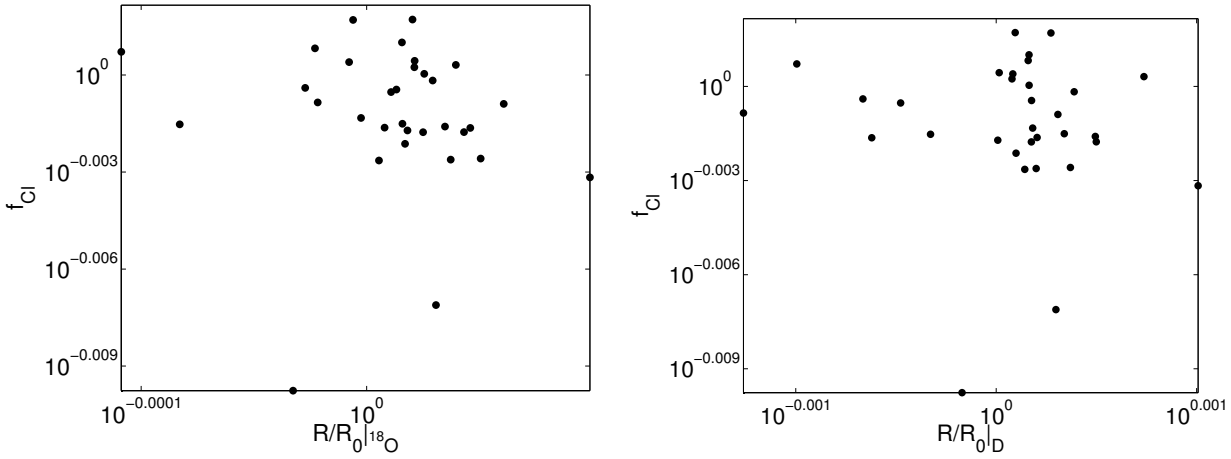
centrations and δ^{18}O can be written:

$$\frac{1}{\alpha - 1} \ln \left(\frac{\frac{\delta^{18}O_{final}}{1000} + 1}{\frac{\delta^{18}O_{initial}}{1000} + 1} \right) = \ln \left(\frac{[Cl^-]_{initial}}{[Cl^-]_{final}} \right) . \tag{4.6}$$

However, as shown in Figures 4.14 and 4.15, there is not a strong relationship between the fractionation factor calculated from the chloride concentrations and that calculated from the isotope ratios, nor does the fractionation of the isotopes and [Cl$^-$] have a trend with depth.

Since the fractionation signal in the [Cl$^-$] is clearer than that in the stable isotopes, we can consider whether the amount of fractionation, assuming it is evaporative, could be expected to be detectable by the Picarro. The most fractionated chloride measurement yields an f of 0.98. This would yield a ratio $\frac{R}{R_0}|_O$ of 0.9998. For a typical measured $\delta^{18}O_{final}$ equal to 0.4‰, the measured $\delta^{18}O_{initial}$ would be equal to 0.6‰ which is greater than the precision of the Picarro and therefore detectable. However, most of the [Cl$^-$] determined f values are greater than 0.99, which would yield a measured difference in δ^{18}O of less than 0.1‰, indistinguishable from 0 given the measurement precision of the Picarro. Because the relationship between isotope fractionation and chloride concentration due to

evaporation is undetectable, we can not rule out that the observed fractionation in our two sets of samples is at least in part evaporative.



(a) (b)

Figure 4.14: Chloride fractionation vs. isotope ratios (a) shows chloride vs. δ^{18}O, (b) shows chloride vs. δD

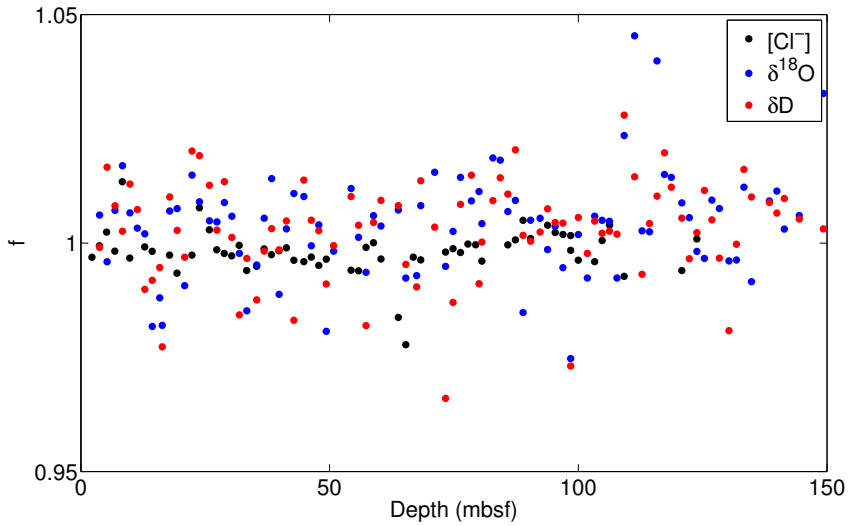


Figure 4.15: Fractionation vs. depth

4.5 Conclusions

We found that Rhizons were unable to be used in the very deepest, highly compacted ocean sediments. Near the Advanced Piston Core (APC) refusal depth, our attempts to insert Rhizons into the sediments without pre-drilling the sediment were typically unsuccessful. Even when pre-drilling the sediment, the sediment would quickly fill in, crushing the Rhizon and leading to sub-optimal water extraction.

In less compacted sediments, the Rhizons caused contamination of the chloride concentration and oxygen isotope values. Our analysis indicates that this contamination is caused either by evaporative or diffusive fractionation, rather than a blank in the Rhizon or mixing with drill fluid.

In the future we need to find a way to markedly increase the number of high quality measurements of sediment pore fluid chloride and oxygen isotopes, as we still lack suitable alternative ways to reconstruct ocean temperature and salinity. Emerging technologies in ocean sediment drilling, such as the MeBo, may afford an increase in spatial density of pore fluid measurements.

Chapter 5

The role of ocean cooling in setting glacial southern source bottom water salinity

Abstract

At the Last Glacial Maximum (LGM), the salinity contrast between northern source deep water and southern source bottom water was reversed with respect to the contrast today. Additionally, Glacial Southern Source Bottom Water (GSSBW) was saltier than Antarctic Bottom Water (AABW), over and above the difference implied by the mean sea level. This study examines to what extent cold temperatures, through their effect on ice formation and melting, could have caused these differences. Computational sensitivity experiments using a coupled ice shelf cavity - sea ice - ocean model are performed in a Weddell Sea domain, as a representative case study for bottom water formation originating from Antarctic continental shelves. Ocean temperatures at the domain open boundaries are systematically lowered to determine the sensitivity of Weddell Sea water mass properties to a range of cool ocean temperatures. The steady state salinities differ between experiments due to temperature-induced responses of ice shelf and sea ice melting and freezing, evaporation and open boundary fluxes. The results of the experiments indicate that reduced ocean temperature can explain up to 30% of the salinity difference between GSSBW and AABW, primarily due to decreased ice shelf melting. The smallest and most exposed ice shelves, which abut narrow continental shelves, have the greatest sensitivity to the ocean temperature changes, suggesting that at the LGM there could have been a shift in geographical site dominance in bottom water formation. More sea ice is formed and exported in the cold ocean experiments, but the effect of this on salinity is negated by an equal magnitude reduction in evaporation.

5.1 Introduction

Paleo reconstructions of deep ocean salinity and temperature at the Last Glacial Maximum (LGM; see Table 1 for abbreviations) indicate that ocean density gradients were primarly set by salinity. Recent modeling studies (Bouttes et al., 2009, 2010) suggest that this stratification could have had a significant impact on the rate of the mean overturning circulation and the carbon cycle, but it is unknown whether or by what mechanism the salinity/density gradient could have been created and maintained. We investigate to what extent sea ice - ice sheet - ocean interactions over the Antarctic continental shelves could explain this change in salinity structure.

At the LGM the sea level was around 125 m lower than it is today due to the expansion of continental ice sheets, corresponding to an average ocean salinity increase of roughly 1.2 g kg^{-1}. The salinity of Atlantic Glacial Southern Source Bottom Water (GSSBW) at the LGM was 2.3 g kg^{-1} higher than that of modern Antarctic Bottom Water (AABW), leaving 1.1 g kg^{-1} unexplained by a contraction of the oceans (Adkins et al., 2002). Water at sites occupied by northern source intermediate/deep water was saltier as well, but the salinity increase there roughly matched the average, or was slightly lower. Thus at the LGM the Atlantic Ocean deep water masses were more stratified in salinity. As $\delta^{18}O$ measurements show that deep ocean temperatures were all similar and close to the freezing point (Adkins et al., 2002, Malone et al., 2004, Schrag et al., 2002), density gradients would have been primarily set by salinity. The observed glacial salinity stratification, when compared to the modern temperature stratification, corresponds to a higher than modern density stratification between northern and southern deep water. In addition, the LGM version of NADW, Glacial North Atlantic Intermediate Water (GNAIW), was fresher than GSSBW in the Atlantic, which is opposite in sign to the salinity difference between NADW and AABW today.

In the modern, NADW is a precursor to AABW. AABW has a lower salinity than NADW due to modifications that occur in the Southern Ocean. The properties of NADW help determine these Southern Ocean processes and how they contribute to the final characteristics of AABW. The salinity maximum that distinguishes NADW from other water

masses identifies it as the main contributor to Circumpolar Deep Water (CDW) (Reid and Lynn, 1971). CDW interacts with water masses formed and modified over the Antarctic continental shelves to eventually transform into AABW. In the Southern Ocean there is an excess of precipitation over evaporation, and over the Antarctic continental shelves there is an additional freshwater input from basal melting of marine-based ice sheets inside ice shelf cavities. Brine rejection from sea ice combined with sea ice export compensates for these freshwater fluxes over continental shelves, such that the salinity of continental shelf waters can be as high or higher than that of CDW. Antarctic continental shelf water properties, in particular those in the Weddell and Ross Seas and on the Adélie Coast, determine the properties of AABW. The details of how continental shelf waters are transformed to AABW and the properties of AABW vary with location, but share many general similarities. There is also evidence that water exported from the Weddell Sea makes up more than half of AABW (Orsi et al., 1999). Therefore we consider the modern Weddell Sea as a representative source of AABW formation in our study.

A detailed review of the modern processes responsible for water masses in the Weddell Sea and how they contribute to bottom water formation can be found in Nicholls et al. (2009) and references therein. Figure 5.1 shows the Θ_0/S properties of water masses on the modern Weddell Sea continental shelf. A subset of these water masses can be used to illustrate the main processes that contribute to AABW properties. Brine rejection and sea ice export in the Weddell Sea form High Salinity Shelf Water (HSSW: S $>$ 34.5), the highest density water formed on the continental shelf. Ice Shelf Water (ISW: $\Theta_0 <$ -1.9°C), the second highest density continental shelf water mass, is formed in large part from ice shelf meltwater. Overflows of ISW and HSSW entrain other water along their paths to the abyssal Weddell Sea, primarily diluted CDW in the form of Warm Deep Water and Modified Warm Deep Water (MWDW). The original properties of ISW, HSSW and modified CDW are evident in Weddell Sea Bottom Water (WSBW) and Weddell Sea Deep Water (WSDW), the deepest Weddell Sea water masses. The export of WSDW at the northwest boundary of the Weddell Sea is the Weddell Sea's main contribution to AABW (Fahrbach et al., 1995, Foldvik et al., 2004, Gordon et al., 2010). Sea ice and ice shelves, by determining the properties of ISW and HSSW, heavily influence the final properties of AABW.

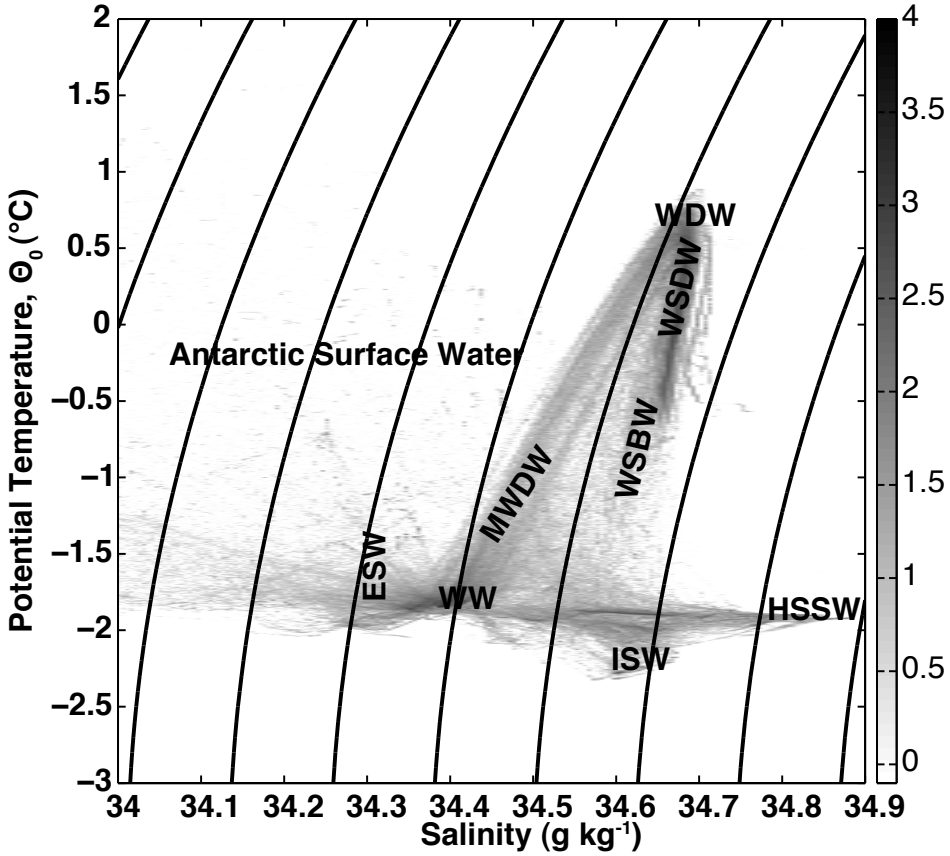


Figure 5.1: Histogram of modern Weddell Sea continental shelf properties (figure after Nicholls et al. (2009)). See Table 1 for water mass abbreviations. Continental shelf in this figure is defined after Nicholls et al. (2009) as south of 70°S and west of 0°. Curved lines are surface isopycnals separated by 0.1 kg m^{-3}. Gray scale shows the base 10 logarithm of the frequency of each value. Bin sizes are 0.005 in both S and Θ_0

In the balance of these processes, AABW is fresher than NADW, but the salinity difference between the two is slight (∼0.1 g/kg; Nicholls et al. (2009), Orsi et al. (1999), Toggweiler and Samuels (1995)). While salinity plays a role in the local sinking of Antarctic continental waters, the density difference between the two water masses is dominated by temperature; AABW is denser than NADW because it is colder.

Why was the LGM deep Atlantic Ocean so salty and why did the contrast in salinity between northern source and southern source deep waters switch? In addition to having an increased ice volume, the glacial Antarctic ice sheet was characterized by a northwards-shifted grounding line (Hall, 2009, Whitehouse et al., 2012). Further, it is likely that the wind forcing of the Southern Ocean at the LGM differed from its present state (Toggweiler et al., 2006). Undoubtedly these features had a significant role in setting glacial ocean

circulation. However, long before the ice sheets expanded to their most recent maximum extent, the mean deep ocean temperature had already cooled $\sim 1.5 - 2°C$ below its temperature during the last interglacial and during the modern periods (Chappell and Shackleton, 1986, Cutler et al., 2003). The approach to the LGM ocean and ice sheet states may have been initiated by this advance cooling and its resultant feedbacks.

In this study, we hypothesize that the cool ocean temperatures prior to and during the LGM can account for a significant portion of the increased southern source bottom water salinity observed at the LGM, due to a reduction in freshwater from ice shelf basal melting and an increase in salinity from sea ice processes on the Antarctic continental shelves. To test this hypothesis, we perform a set of numerical ocean cooling sensitivity experiments in a regional Weddell Sea domain. We examine how ocean properties on the continental shelf change in response to lower ocean temperatures and changes in ice - ocean interactions in the Weddell Sea. We additionally consider the relative influence of ice shelves versus sea ice in setting continental shelf water properties, and how the balance between the two changes in response to increasingly cool temperatures.

As modern bottom water formation depends on the complex interaction between sea ice, ice shelves and the ocean, our experiments use an ocean general circulation model (ocean GCM) coupled to dynamic/thermodynamic sea ice and thermodynamic ice shelf cavity models. While the ice sheet's total contribution to the freshwater and thermodynamic budgets plays a key role in setting modern deep water formation, the distributed locations of meltwater injection and their interactions with ocean and sea ice dynamics cannot be neglected (Hellmer, 2004). Further, due to the complex interactions of different components of the ice-ocean-atmosphere system, it is difficult to predict how the system will respond to a temperature change. For example, observed Antarctic sea ice area has not decreased in response to warming ocean temperatures (Zwally et al., 2002).

5.2 Methods

5.2.1 Model Setup

We use the Massachusetts Institute of Technology general circulation model (MITgcm; Marshall et al., 1997a,b) in a regional domain configuration to investigate the effect of ocean cooling on ice shelf and sea ice processes. The integration domain (Fig. 5.2) is derived from a global cube sphere grid configuration with horizontal grid spacing of ∼18 km (Menemenlis et al., 2008); it encompasses the Weddell Sea and the ocean bordering Queen Maud Land, and it extends slightly into the Antarctic Circumpolar Current (identified in the model by surface velocities greater than 0.5 m/s); it also covers a small section of the Bellinghausen Sea west of the Antarctic Peninsula. Ocean bathymetry is from the so-called S2004 blend (Marks and Smith, 2006). Ice shelf cavity bathymetry for the Filchner-Ronne Ice Shelf (FRIS) and for the Larsen Ice Shelf in the Weddell Sea as well as for the Eastern Ice Shelves are derived from BEDMAP (Lythe et al., 2001), and ice shelf thicknesses are taken from DiMarzio et al. (2008) using firn corrections from van den Broeke et al. (2008).

The MITgcm is a three-dimensional general circulation model, which solves the primitive equations for fluid on a rotating sphere. Our MITgcm configuration uses the hydrostatic and Boussinesq approximations. The effect of turbulent eddy transport and mixing are parameterized by a combination of several schemes. There is a diffusive flux of properties along isoneutral surfaces proportional to the local gradient of the properties as described in Redi (1979). The advective component of turbulence is approximated using the Griffies (1998) skew flux formulation of the Gent and McWilliams (1990) eddy transport velocity. To account for vertical mixing due to boundary layer dynamics and to unresolved processes such as shear instabilities, internal wave activity, and convection, we include the K-Profile Parameterization (KPP) scheme (Large et al., 1994). Using the Gent-McWilliams/Redi parameterization in combination with the KPP requires an additional flux/slope tapering scheme to remove spurious interactions between the parameterizations (Large et al., 1997). The physical equations are integrated using a finite volume discretization in locally orthogonal curvilinear coordinates, with the vertical dimension described by level coordi-

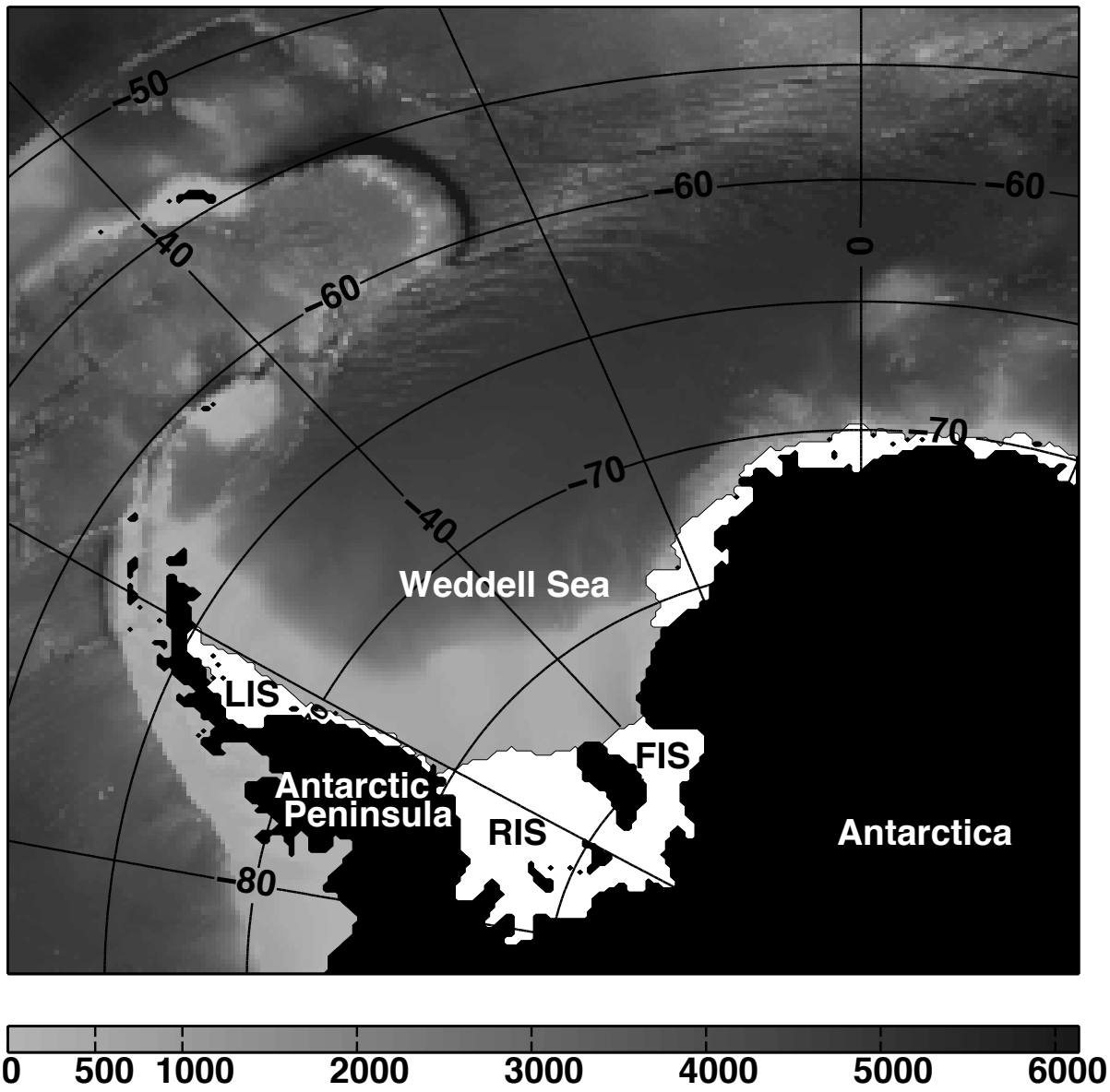


Figure 5.2: Computational domain and bathymetry. White area indicates floating ice shelves and black area is land/grounded ice comprising the Antarctic continent. LIS: Larsen Ice Shelf, RIS: Ronne Ice Shelf, FIS: Filchner Ice Shelf. We do not include ice shelves east of the Antarctic Peninsula. Model domain bathymetry in meters is represented by the gray scale. In the following analyses we use the space between the ice shelf front and the 1000-m contour as the continental shelf in order to include water in the Filchner and Ronne depressions in our analysis. Note that water under the ice shelves is not included, but the water found equatorward of the eastern Weddell ice shelves is included.

nates. There are 50 vertical levels with thicknesses that increase monotonically from 10 m near the surface to 456 m at the deepest level. The bathymetry is represented using the partial cell formulation of Adcroft et al. (1997) with a minimum fraction equal to 0.3.

The ocean model is coupled to the dynamic and thermodynamic sea ice model described in Losch et al. (2010). Our configuration assumes that the sea ice has no heat capacity, a setup commonly described as a "zero-layer model" of the thermodynamics. Sea ice model parameters are adjusted using a Green's function approach (Menemenlis et al., 2005). Data constraints include sea ice thickness from Upward Looking Sonar (ULS; Harms et al., 2001) and ice motion from satellite passive microwave data (Kwok et al., 1998). Optimized parameters include ocean albedo (0.15), dry ice albedo (0.88), wet ice albedo (0.79), dry snow albedo (0.95), wet snow albedo (0.82), air/ocean drag (1.02), air/ice drag (0.0012), ocean/ice drag (0.0055), ice strength P^* (12500 N m^{-2}), and lead closing H_o (1.0). See Nguyen et al. (2011) for a detailed description of the above parameters and of the optimization methodology.

The thermodynamic ice shelf cavity model is that described in Losch (2008). The shape and thickness of the ice shelves do not change as a result of melting or freezing at the interface, but there is a time-dependent flux of heat and freshwater between the ice shelf and the ocean. The fundamental melt-freeze process is defined by "three-equation thermodynamics" (Hellmer and Olbers, 1989, Jenkins et al., 2001).

Exchange of heat and freshwater between the base of the ice sheet and the ocean is parameterized as a diffusive turbulent tracer flux of temperature or salinity. Following Holland and Jenkins (1999), turbulent diffusivities of temperature and salinity are, respectively, $\gamma_T = 10^{-4}$ and $\gamma_S = 5.05 \times 10^{-7}$. Freshwater flux in kg is

$$q = \frac{\rho\, c_p\, \gamma_T}{L}(T_b - T) + \frac{\rho_I\, c_{p,I}\, \kappa}{L\, h}(T_b - T_s),$$

where positive q values indicate melting, ρ is the density of seawater determined by the nonlinear equation of state of Jackett et al. (2006), ρ_I is the density of ice (917 kg m^{-3}), c_p is the specific heat of seawater (3974 J kg^{-1} K^{-1}), $c_{p,I}$ is that of ice (2000 J kg^{-1} K^{-1}), L is the latent heat of fusion (334 kJ kg^{-1}), κ is the conductivity of heat through the ice (1.54×10^{-6} m^2 s^{-1}), and h is the local thickness of the ice shelf, which varies in space but is constant in time. T is in-situ ocean temperature in °C, computed as a volume-weighted average of the two levels of ocean below the ice shelf grid cells, T_b is the temperature at the ice interface, which is assumed to be at the in-situ freezing point, and T_s denotes

the surface temperature of the ice shelf, here a constant $-20°$C. While the water freezing point in the ocean model is calculated from the non-linear equation of state of Jackett et al. (2006),the in-situ freezing point in the ice shelf equations is determined from the linearized equation of state:

$$T_b = 0.0901 - 0.0575\, S_b - 7.61 \times 10^{-4}\, p_b,$$

where S_b is the salinity and p_b is the in-situ pressure in dBar of the water at the ice interface. Pressure is computed using the hydrostatic approximation. The salt flux at the interface is a virtual salinity flux calculated from:

$$q\,(S_b - S_I) = \rho\,\gamma_s\,(S_b - S),$$

where S is ocean salinity computed in the same water volume as T. S_I is the ice salinity, which we take to be 0. The above three equations are solved for S_b, T_b, and q. The contribution to the ocean is then given by an advective tracer flux to the ocean:

$$\rho\, K \frac{\partial X}{\partial z} = (\rho\,\gamma_X - q)(X_b - X),$$

where X is the tracer, either T or S, and K is the vertical eddy diffusivity of the mixing scheme (M. Losch, pers. com. 2010).

5.2.2 Salinity Tracers

In order to distinguish salinity changes originating from ice shelf basal melt or freeze from those occurring at the surface ocean interface with sea ice and the atmosphere, we augment our copy of the MITgcm code with two new three-dimensional tracers. One tracer tracks changes in grid cell salinity from the ice shelf, while the other accumulates salinity changes resulting from surface processes. In our model configuration, the ice shelf and sea ice freshwater fluxes, in addition to salt rejected from sea ice, are applied to the surface level of the salinity field as virtual salinity fluxes, that is, the freshwater flux is converted to an equivalent salinity flux and does not change the volume of the grid cell

to which it is added. Each tracer adds the values of its respective virtual salinity fluxes to the top layer of a three-dimensional passive tracer field at each time step, which then evolve in time and space in the same manner as the salt field. We do not separate surface salt fluxes due to precipitation, evaporation, and runoff from those due to freezing and melting of ice in our surface salt tracer for reasons discussed later in the text.

5.2.3 Boundary Conditions

The same year (1994) of lateral and surface boundary conditions is repeated for every year of the 50-year control and sensitivity integrations in order to force the model to a quasi-steady state, which is reached after about 30 model years. We consider steady state to be the period in the integration after which the variations in yearly-mean change of the domain-averaged salinity and temperature values are, respectively, less than 10^{-4}% and 10^{-2}%, which corresponds to approximately 2 $\times 10^{-5}$ g kg^{-1} and 10^{-3} °C. Values we report as steady state are averages over the final 10 years of each integration.

Lateral and surface boundary conditions for the control experiment are taken from year 1994 of an Estimating the Circulation and Climate of the Ocean, Phase 2 (ECCO2) solution known as "cube78". The cube78 solution was obtained using model Green's functions to adjust a global, eddying ocean and sea ice configuration of the MITgcm (Menemenlis et al., 2008). The prescribed lateral boundary conditions are temperature, salinity, velocity of water and sea ice, sea ice area, and sea ice thickness. Oceanic boundary conditions are prescribed as monthly-mean values, which are interpolated in time to each model time step (1200 s) in order to avoid temporal discontinuities. Sea ice boundary conditions are interpolated to the model time step from daily-mean values.

Surface boundary conditions (six-hourly downwelling short wave and long wave radiation, 10-meter wind velocity, 2-meter atmospheric temperature and humidity, and precipitation) used for the cube78 solution are primarily based on the European Centre for Medium-Range Weather Forecasts (ECMWF) 40-year reanalysis (ERA-40; Uppala et al., 2005) except for precipitation, which is primarily based on the Global Precipitation Climatology Project (GPCP; Adler et al., 2003). Surface atmospheric conditions remain the

same throughout all the experiments; they are all forced with the cube78 surface atmospheric conditions. However, because heat and water fluxes at the surface are diagnosed, they are able to vary with changing surface ocean temperature. Specifically, surface heat flux and evaporation are calculated using the Large and Pond (1982) bulk formulae and surface wind stress is calculated using the drag coefficient parameterization of Large and Yeager (2004).

All control and sensitivity experiments are initialized from rest and from temperature and salinity values from the January World Ocean Atlas 2009 (WOA09; Locarnini et al., 2010, Antonov et al., 2010) interpolated onto our model grid. Data used to construct WOA09 are sparse in this region, particularly inside the ice shelf cavities, as ocean and ice conditions limit observations.

5.2.4 Control Integration Comparison with Data

Our control integration generally resembles modern data in the Weddell Sea, despite some significant deficiencies. We note that the modern data shown here are distinct from those used as our initial condition; to our knowledge these were not incorporated in the WOA09 compilation. Also they were not available to optimize the global ECCO2 solution we use for lateral boundary conditions. Figures 5.1 and 5.3 are logarithmic (base 10) histograms of modern data and control experiment properties over the continental shelf. They are plotted as histograms in order to highlight the water masses that are most typical, but the scales are not comparable between figures.

Modern data sampling occurs during Southern Hemisphere summer; therefore the plot of our control experiment shows points from October - June. Seasonal transitions in our control may not correspond exactly to seasonal transitions in the modern, so our control experiment might have more winter type water properties than the modern data. Taking measurements near or under ice shelves is difficult, which is another source of differences between the model results and the data. In our computational setup we can easily sample at every point below the ice shelves. This is why our control ISW potential temperatures have values as low as -3°C, which corresponds to the in-situ freezing point at the deepest

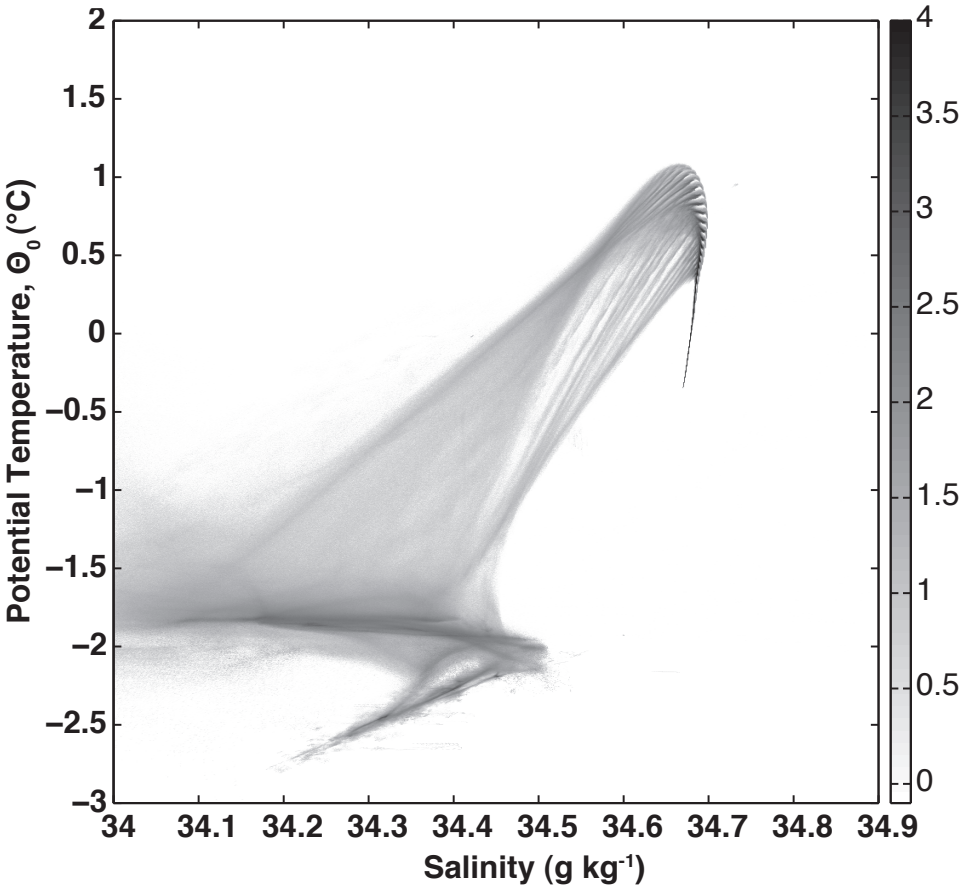


Figure 5.3: Histogram of control integration continental shelf properties. Weddell Sea continental shelf is defined after Nicholls et al. (2009) to be south of 70°S and west of 0°. Gray scale shows the base 10 logarithm of the frequency of each value. Bin sizes are 0.001 in both S and Θ_0.

points of the ice shelf base. HSSW in our integration is very low in salinity with respect to modern values; maximum values are 34.5 g kg^{-1} as opposed to the observed 34.9 g kg^{-1}. One likely reason for this is that sub-grid-scale sea ice processes are parameterized, and a faithful representation of their effect on salinity depends on parameter optimization. Sea ice behaves differently in the presence of ice shelves such that the model parameters must be re-optimized in their presence. However, even if the sea ice parameters were perfectly optimized to reproduce modern continental shelf properties, there would be no guarantee that these parameters would give a realistic solution under glacial conditions.

Our control experiment's representation of WDW is slightly warmer than that observed. WDW is a diluted version of CDW, so it is possible that our control experiment's version is simply less diluted in temperature. Additionally over the computational continental shelf

we find more points with properties of modern Antarctic Surface Water than apparent in the data, which typically is characteristic of the open ocean away from the continental shelf. This could be because the Weddell Gyre intrudes further onto the shelf in the model than observed, probably as a result of the grid discretization.

The control integration's representation of WSDW and WSBW is very narrow in property space and essentially determined by the boundary conditions. The absence of HSSW explains in part the absence of typical WSDW and WSBW, as HSSW mixes with WDW to form these two. Still, it is not necessary that HSSW take on its most extreme value in salinity to form deep water; in fact both WDW and WSDW are higher in salinity than WSBW but have lower densities than WSBW due to their warmer temperatures.

Although the control experiment produces low salinity HSSW, there is another reason why we observe a gap in property space between the control HSSW and WDW. The rapid increase of vertical grid size close to the depth of the shelf break, in combination with the coarse horizontal resolution, cause shelf properties to mix away rapidly. As a result, there is negligible transport from the shelf to the deep ocean in our experiments. Resolution of dense overflows in the modern Weddell Sea requires Δ z and Δ h $<$ 100 m (Legg et al., 2006, Winton et al., 1998), a grid several orders of magnitude finer than ours. However, the grid that we use is already an order of magnitude finer than typical coupled climate models. This is not merely an artifact of our regional computational setup; a recent study diagnosing bottom water formation in ocean general circulation models finds that MITgcm, even in the ECCO global configuration, forms its deepest waters primarily through transformation of intermediate waters (Downes et al., 2011). Other models have similar and sometimes worse problems. Improved representation of bottom water formation, and its role in ocean ventilation changes under future and past climate scenarios, will require very high resolution or development and implementation of a sub-grid-scale parameterization.

The melt rate magnitude and patterns of the Filchner-Ronne and western Weddell Sea ice shelves in our control experiment compare well with estimates from modern satellite data. Recent estimates from interferometric synthetic-aperture radar (InSAR) data and flux-gate modelling give a net melt rate of the combined western ice shelves in our numerical

domain of 109 ± 24.8 km^3 yr^{-1} (Joughin and Padman, 2003, Rignot et al., 2008). In our control experiment the combined 10-year-averaged freshwater flux of these ice shelves is 111.6 km^3 yr^{-1}. In contrast the melt rates of the eastern ice shelves in our control experiment are about an order of magnitude higher than recent data estimates; we compute an average of 1071 km^3 yr^{-1} compared to an estimate of 73 ± km^3 yr^{-1} from available data (Rignot et al., 2008). Although the control melt rates of the eastern ice shelves are likely too high, this does not have a significant direct effect on the continental shelf properties and property changes in our experiments, as discussed later. Most of this meltwater is exported as buoyant surface water. However, the anomalously high meltwater flux to the surface ocean could have a damping effect on the sea ice response in our experiments. In the control, the overproduction of ice shelf meltwater could insulate the sea ice from the underlying ocean conditions. The ocean cooling in our experiments causes and thus coincides with the removal of this anomalous ice shelf freshwater, such that the sensitivity of the sea ice model in this region to changes in ocean conditions might be underestimated.

5.2.5 Experiments

Eight numerical cooling experiments are done by changing the ocean open boundary temperatures only. The experimental boundary conditions in potential temperature, Θ_e, are defined as

$$\Theta_e = \Theta_c - \eta(\Theta_c - \Theta_{fr})$$

where Θ_c is the boundary potential temperature of the control integration, Θ_{fr} is the salinity and pressure-dependent freezing point, and η ranges from 0.1 to 0.8. Thus $\eta = 0.1$ corresponds to the least cooling, while $\eta = 0.8$ represents the experiment with the most cooling. Note that each boundary grid cell can take on a different value; the boundary conditions are not homogeneous.

Modification of the boundary temperatures alters the density of the boundary points with respect to those of the control. To ensure that our experiments are examining the effect of thermodynamic rather than dynamic changes, we also perform a separate set of eight "density-compensated" integrations. In addition to the temperature changes described

above, in the density-compensated integrations we change the salinity of the boundary conditions; to retain the control densities with colder temperatures requires decreasing the salinity of each point. We use a local linear approximation of $\frac{\partial \rho}{\partial S}$ at each point to compute the change in salinity necessary to restore the density of the point to that of the control. The density compensated integrations result in ice melt patterns and magnitudes virtually indistinguishable from those of the non-compensated experiments, however they display a very large freshening flux from the boundaries that confuses the interpretation of our results. For this reason we discuss only the non-compensated experiments.

5.3 Results and Discussion

We find large changes in the properties of water masses formed over the continental shelf in response to our cooling experiments. Modern water masses such as ISW, HSSW, and WDW/CDW are identified by their potential temperature and salinity. These identifying properties are exactly the properties that change with each cooling experiment. For this reason, instead of using Θ_0/S cutoff values to define water masses, we examine how properties change in fixed locations of interest. The locations which would tell us the most about modification of AABW properties would be the bottom of the Weddell Sea and the deep levels of the ocean near the northwestern edge of the Weddell Sea. However, the lack of a properly resolved or parameterized bottom boundary layer in the model restricts us to examining experimental results on and near the continental shelf.

With these considerations in mind, our essential result is illustrated in Fig. 5.4, which shows the Θ_0/S properties of water for the control and for two representative cooling sensitivity experiments at their annual salinity maxima, the time at which we expect the largest quantity of HSSW. In order to highlight changes in water masses over the continental shelf that can lead to significant changes in bottom water formation, we plot water properties of the two bottom-most layers of the domain down to the 1700-m depth cutoff and water properties inside the ice shelf cavities. Together these two layers represent, on average, ∼150 m of vertical thickness. Below ∼1700 m the water properties of the control experiment are dominated by the boundary conditions. The

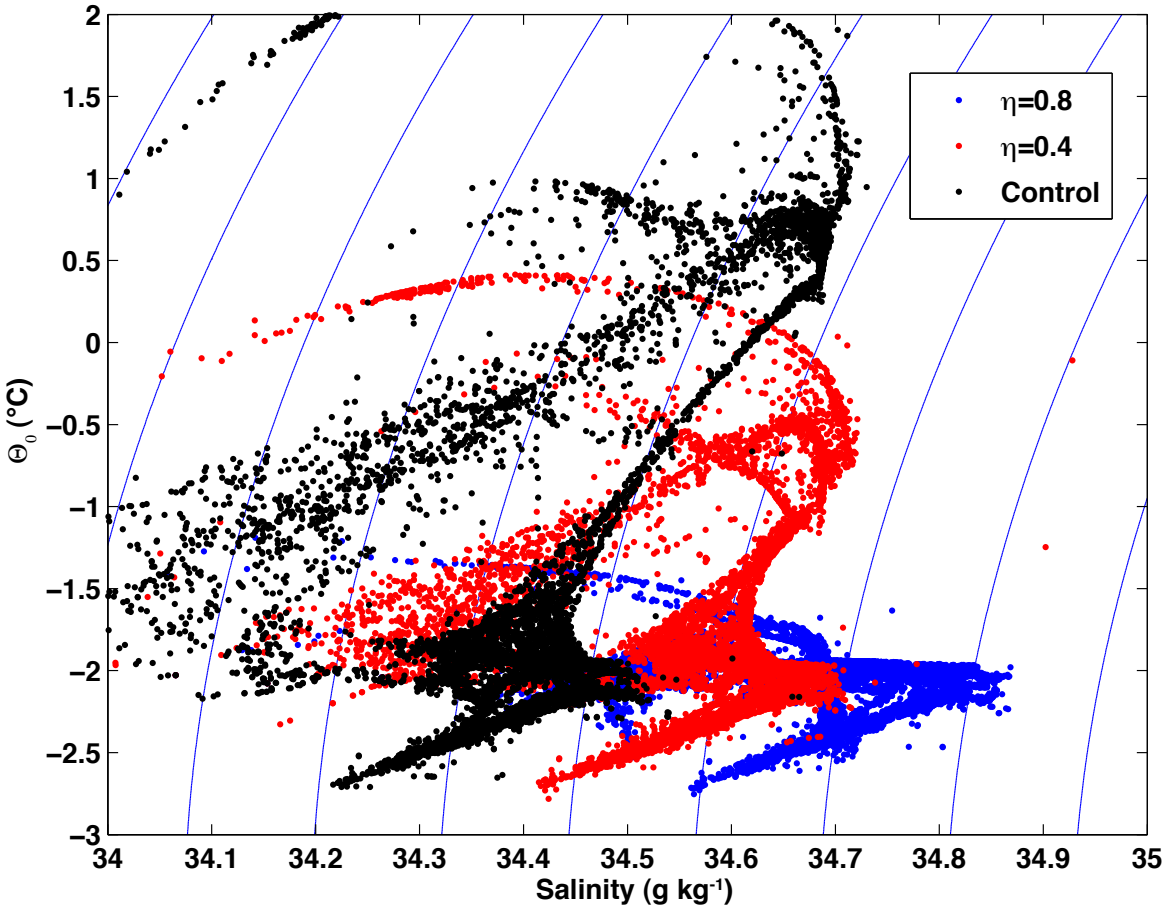


Figure 5.4: Θ_0/S properties of water in two layers along domain bottom down to 1700 m from the control and from two sensitivity experiments at their annual salinity maxima. Together these two layers represent, on average, ∼150 m of vertical thickness. The open ocean and the shelf region west of the Antarctic Peninsula are excluded. All potential temperatures are referenced to the surface. Curved lines are isopycnals. The distance between the isopycnal lines is 0.1 kg m^{-3}

signal of continental shelf processes, a combination of Θ_0 and S, deepens by almost 1000 m in our sensitivity experiments as the domain produces denser water able to descend futher down the continental slope; however, comparison across experiments requires a fixed-depth cutoff. The potential temperature of water in the ice shelf cavities (ISW) is already closely constrained by the in-situ freezing point in the control experiment and does not change noticeably in the experiments. Water masses that correspond to modern ISW and HSSW increase significantly in salinity, up to a maximum of about 0.3 units in response to the maximum cooling experiment. At the surface freezing point, which is the temperature of HSSW, this change in salinity corresponds to an increase in surface density of 0.24 kg/m^3. This increase in surface density is equal to the modern surface

density contrast between HSSW and WDW.

Plotting down to the 1700-m depth encompasses the water that lies along the base of continental shelf and somewhat below the shelf break. This enables us to examine the density contrast of shelf water with the water it entrains as it descends the slope and how the contrast changes with cooler temperature experiments. There is a slight increase in salinity in the warmer, deeper water masses, but the increase is small relative to that of shelf waters. For this reason, the increase in density on the shelf in our experiments is almost identical to a change in surface density contrast between HSSW and WDW. As the continental shelf water overflows the shelf, its density contrast with the surroundings would tend to increase due to the thermobaric effect (Killworth, 1977). Even without thermobaric considerations, a surface density increase of 0.24 kg/m^3 is more than double the modern density difference between NADW and AABW of about 0.1 kg/m^3.

However, the density contrast between the overflow and the overlying water would also tend to decrease due to entrainment. In the modern Weddell Sea, the effect of entrainment on density contrast is small due to the weak density stratification of the water column. An increase in water column stratification, particularly if there is a large density gradient at the shelf break, can counteract the increase in overflow source density and reduce the ability of a high salinity signal to migrate from the continental shelf to the abyssal ocean (Price and O'Neil-Baringer, 1994). Even if the density (and salinity) at the shelf break is increased, it does not guarantee an increase in bottom water density.

5.3.1 Diagnosis of Water Mass Changes – Net Salinity Fluxes and Changes

Figure 5.5 demonstrates that the relationship between domain-averaged S and domain-averaged Θ_0 is linear, with a slope of - 0.006 g kg^{-1}/°C and a maximum decrease of 0.016 g kg^{-1}. This maximum is an order of magnitude smaller than the changes in HSSW implied by Fig. 5.4. This is because Figure 5.4 does not include properties of the deep or surface ocean, nor does it account for the **volume** associated with each water property pair. Salinity changes in our experiments are concentrated in particular regions of the

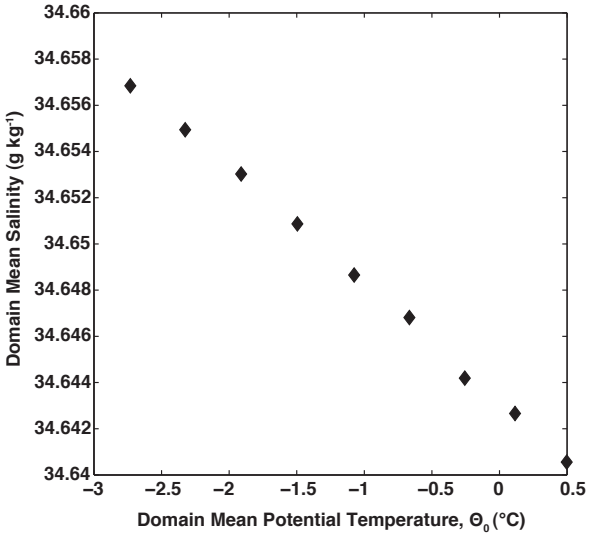


Figure 5.5: Sensitivity of volume-averaged domain salinity to volume-averaged domain potential temperature. All values are 10-year averages. Each experiment is represented by one point. The control experiment is at $\Theta_0 = 0.5$

domain.

To identify the mechanisms that contribute the most to our experimental results, we consider salinity fluxes to the domain from distinct sources. While in the real ocean many of these salinity fluxes are freshwater fluxes (evaporation, precipitation, and melting), we use a volume conserving configuration of MITgcm. In this light, it is more sensible to discuss salinity fluxes, keeping in mind that they have the opposite sign to freshwater fluxes.

For reference, Figure 5.6 shows the absolute values of the salinity fluxes that contribute to the salinity of the whole domain. The bulk of our discussion will demonstrate the importance of changes in ice shelf fluxes over that of changes in sea ice fluxes across the experiments. However, it is important to keep in mind that the average salinity of water in each experiment is determined primarily by the salinity of water entering and exiting the domain and by the sea ice and surface fluxes. In the modern Weddell Sea, for example, water masses such as HSSW are higher in salinity than NADW/CDW because of sea ice formation and export. The control experiment ice shelf contribution is about an order of magnitude smaller than the sum of the other terms (Fig. 5.6). In contrast, **changes** in the ice shelf salinity flux are an order of magnitude larger than changes in the large salt

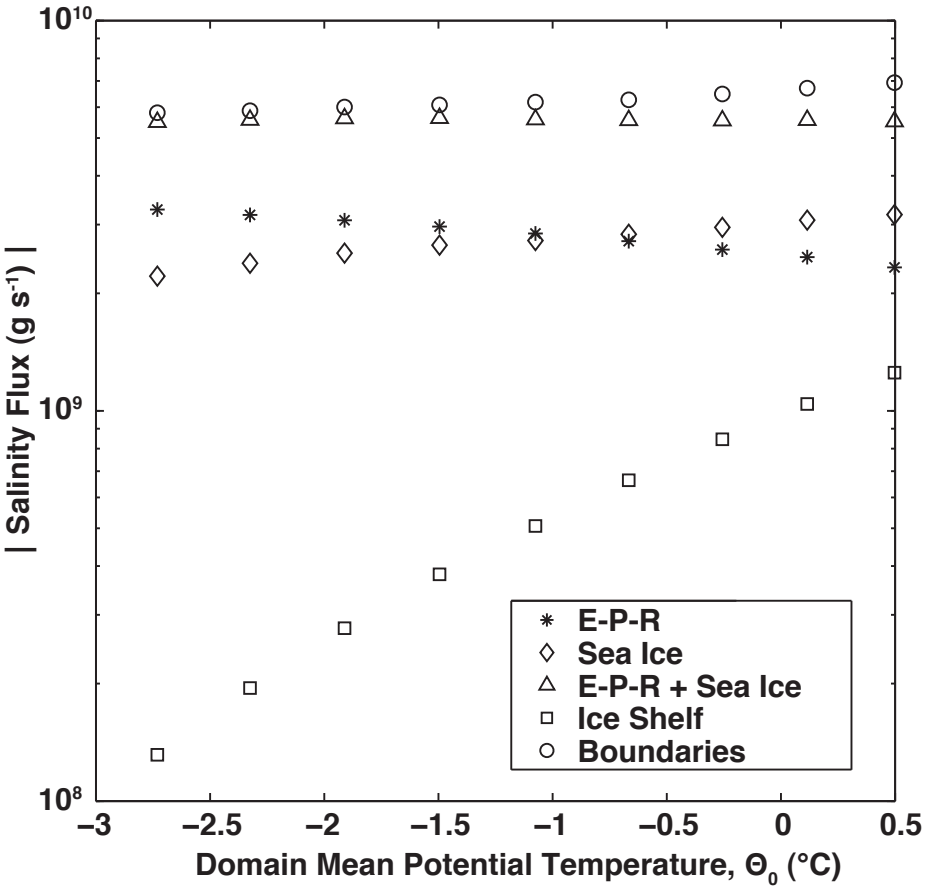


Figure 5.6: Magnitude of salinity fluxes integrated over the entire domain. E–P–R = evaporation − precipitation − runoff. For reference, 10^{10} g s^{-1} = 6.5 m yr^{-1} of sea ice exported (assuming a spatial cover of the total domain ocean area), so the variation between the sea ice export between the control and the coldest sensitivity experiment is $\sim$ 0.82–1.03 m yr^{-1}. Precipitation and runoff are prescribed in our experiments, so the change in E–P–R is due to a change in evaporation only. The magnitude of the sea ice and evaporation contributions to domain salinity are 0.5 – 1 order larger than the magnitude of the ice shelf contribution in all experiments. However, the sea ice is much less sensitive to ocean temperature change than the ice shelves.

fluxes.

Figure 5.7 is the change in salinity flux in the sensitivity experiment with respect to that of the control. Salinity is able to change in our experiments as a result of changes in evaporation, ice melting, ice freezing, and fluxes at the boundaries. Precipitation and runoff (not shown) are prescribed and do not change throughout the experiments. At first glance it seems that changes in multiple processes contribute equal magnitudes to the total salinity flux change. However, several of these processes are not independent and have a negligible combined effect.

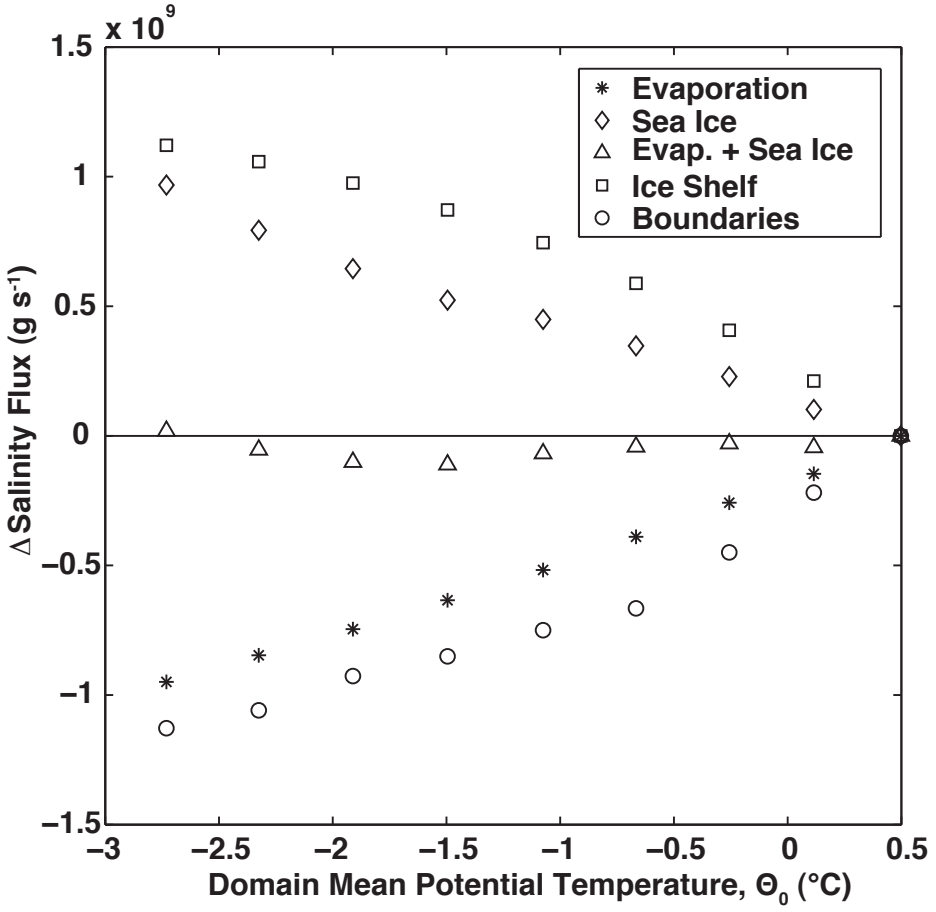


Figure 5.7: Change in salinity fluxes integrated over the entire domain. Each experiment is represented by the domain steady state volume-averaged potential temperature. All values are 10-year averages. For reference, 10^9 g s^{-1} = 0.65 m yr^{-1} of sea ice exported (assuming a spatial cover of the total domain ocean area). Sea ice and evaporation are of approximately equal magnitude but opposite sign; their combination is an order of magnitude smaller than all other fluxes, that is, they essentially cancel each other's contribution.

Evaporation and sea ice changes have opposite sign but are of roughly equal magnitude; that is, evaporation decreases with cooling but sea ice brine rejection and freshwater export both increase with cooling. When we calculate the evaporative flux normalized by open ocean area, we find that it is a constant for all experiments. Therefore the decrease in evaporation is primarily due to increasing sea ice cover; water under the ice can not evaporate. The sum of evaporation and sea ice changes, shown as triangles in Fig. 5.7, contributes an order of magnitude smaller change to the domain changes in salinity than those due to changes in ice shelf and boundary fluxes.

Salinity fluxes from the boundaries are due to the experimental setup. The water in the

experimental domain becomes increasingly saltier with each experiment, but the velocities at the boundaries are prescribed. This leads to an increased flux of salt out of the domain of the same order of magnitude as the increase in salt flux to the domain from reduced net melting of the ice shelves, the primary source of experimental salinity flux changes. In the global ocean the exported salt would either recirculate into the Weddell Sea or be deposited at another location. The salinity stratification of both the Weddell Sea and the global ocean depends on the destination of this salt. However, because our integrations are done in a regional domain and our domain boundaries are non-interactive, the effect of this large quantity of salt is completely unknown and appears to us as a loss of salt.

The ice shelf changes in melting and freezing, which have a salinifying effect on the domain as it is cooled, are an order of magnitude larger than the combined changes in surface processes, which are co-dependent. The increased boundary flux of salinity depends on the increase in domain salinity, so it is a result of the ice-shelf-induced salinity increase rather than a competing process.

5.3.2 Diagnosis of Water Mass Changes – Regional Variations and Salinity Flux Tracers

There is significant spatial variation in the salinity fluxes that contribute to the domain means. Salinity fluxes due to ice shelf melting and freeze-on occur only where there are ice shelves. Perhaps less obvious is the non-uniformity in sea ice and evaporative fluxes. While in the domain average the temperature-induced increase in sea ice is balanced by a decrease in evaporation, this is not true everywhere. Figure 5.8 shows that in our sensitivity experiments, changes due to sea ice dominate the changes in surface salinity flux over the continental shelf. This is because in all of our experiments, and in the modern ocean, the continental shelf is almost completely covered with sea ice year-round. In our experiments there is a small increase in sea ice cover over the continental shelf, as shown in Figures 5.9a and 5.9b, which leads to a small decrease in evaporation with increasingly cool ocean temperatures. However, the increase in area and thickness of sea ice formed over the continental shelf contributes a more significant quantity of salt. In total, the

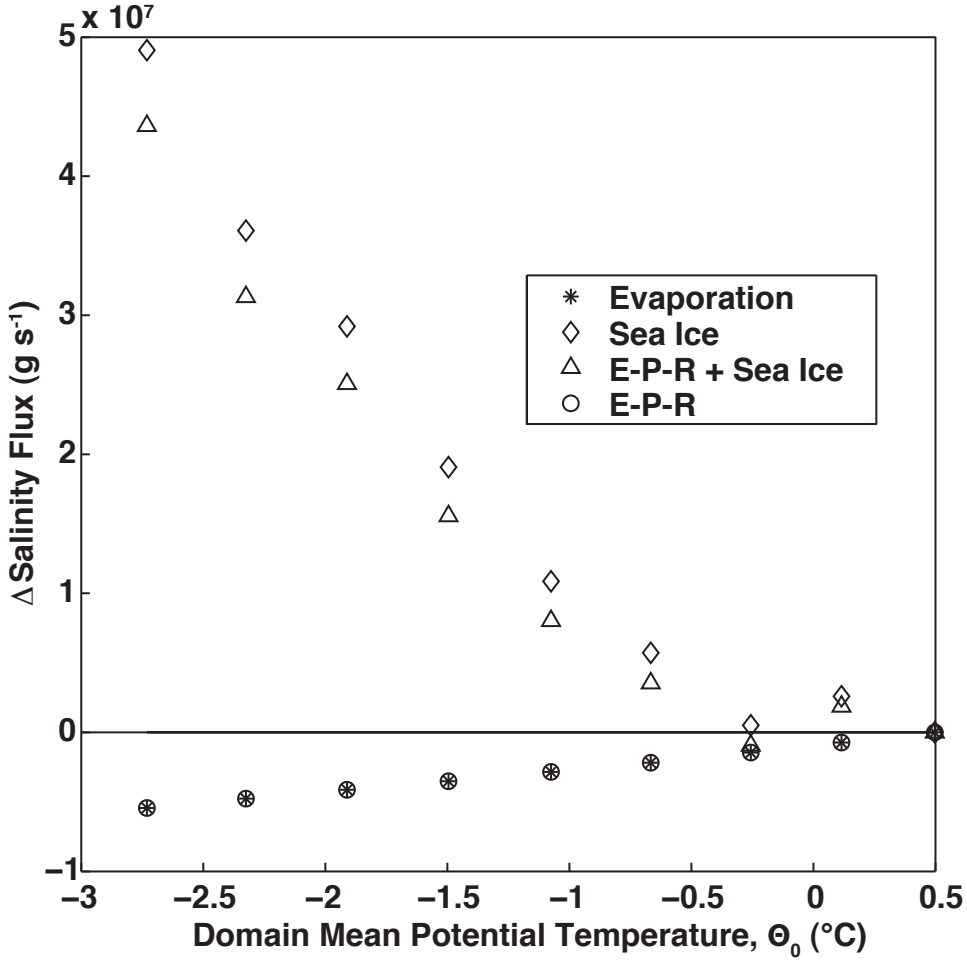
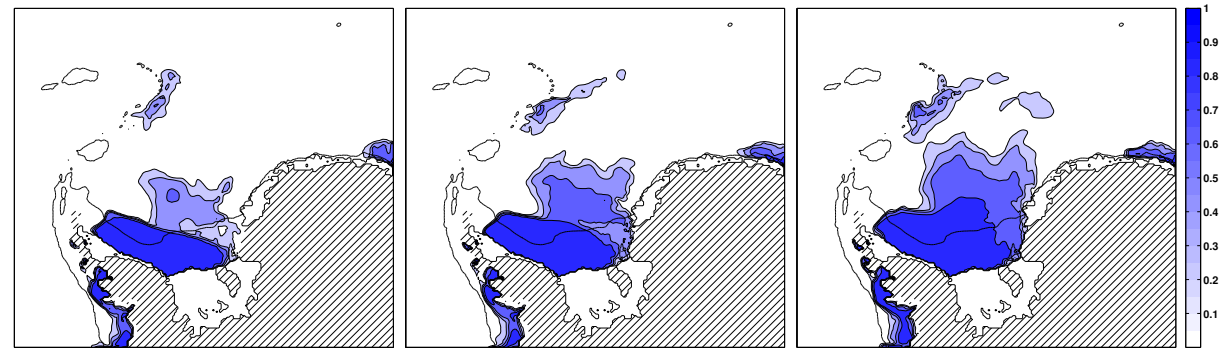
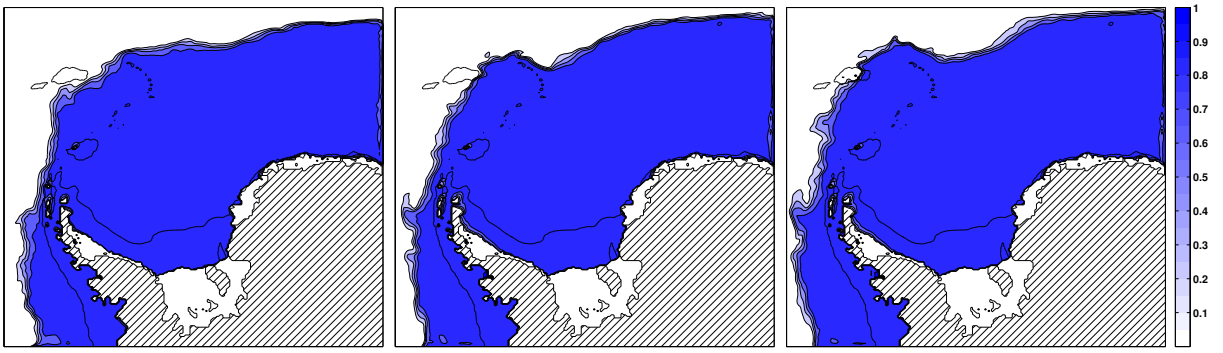


Figure 5.8: Change in surface salinity fluxes over the continental shelf, computed as sensitivity minus control experiment. Each experiment is represented on the x-axis by the domain steady state volume average potential temperature. All values are 10-year averages. The boundaries of the continental shelf are taken as the 1000-meter depth contour, excluding land to the north and/or west of the Antarctic Peninsula. For reference, 10^{-7} g s^{-1} is equivalent to the export of 0.11 m yr^{-1} from the entire continental shelf. E–P–R = evaporation − precipitation − runoff. The only change in E–P–R across the experiments is due to evaporation. Salinity flux changes due to sea ice dominate the change in surface fluxes over the continental shelf.

change in sea ice over the continental shelf is quite small relative to the domain change, as can be seen by comparing the y-axes of Fig. 5.8 and Fig. 5.7. We have not investigated the cause of the constant sea ice flux in the warmest three experiments, but one possibility is that it results from slight differences in the lateral path of the deep Weddell Gyre, which we observe in the experiments. It might also be related to the meltwater overproduction of the eastern ice shelves in the control experiment discussed previously. While the change in sea ice is important relative to other surface salinity fluxes over the continental shelf,



(a)



(b)

Figure 5.9: (a) Minimum sea ice area for three experiments, from left to right: $\eta = 0$, $\eta = 0.4$, $\eta = 0.8$. (b) Maximum sea ice area for three experiments, from left to right: $\eta = 0$, $\eta = 0.4$, $\eta = 0.8$. The color scale indicates grid cell concentration and is unitless. All values represent a 10-year average and a weekly average during the week in which the total sea ice volume is at its yearly maximum. The 1000-m depth contour is overlain to indicate the continental shelf break. Grounded ice is indicated by hash marks and floating ice shelves are adjoined to the grounded ice and colored white.

it is small when compared to the ice shelf flux changes. Also, a change in salinity flux over the continental shelf is not equivalent to a change in continental shelf salinity.

Regional variations in salinity fluxes and their distribution result in a pattern of salinity change quite different than that implied by the domain mean. With the salinity tracers described in the Methods section, we are able to determine how different processes contribute to changes in properties across experiments and where changes are concentrated geographically. To review, we have one salinity tracer that tracks salinity fluxes from the ice shelves and a second tracer that tracks the salinity fluxes from the surface. The latter is a combination of atmospheric fluxes and sea ice fluxes. However, since we showed in the previous section (**3.1**) that the changes in atmospheric fluxes are due to the sea ice,

it is appropriate to think of our surface tracer as equivalent to a sea ice tracer. For these analyses we define the continental shelf as the region between the ice shelf front and the 1000-m depth contour. We use 1000 m rather than 500 m in order to include water inside the Filchner and Ronne depressions on the continental shelf.

We find that the majority of the salinity change on the continental shelf is due to a reduction in ice shelf melting, as shown in Figures 5.10 and 5.11. The total salt flux over the continental shelf in our experiments is dominated by the sea ice, as observed today, but the **change** in salt flux across experiments is dominated by changes in ice sheet basal melting. Figure 5.10 shows the change in distribution of the surface and ice shelf tracers as vertical integrals for a representative (40% cooling) experiment. Overall, the maximum change is largest in the ice shelf salinity tracer.

The effect of the ice shelf melt changes are not only larger but also concentrated on the continental shelf. Figure 5.10 demonstrates that most of the change in ice shelf tracer in our experiments occurs over the continental shelf and near the shelf break, with a particularly high concentration of change inside and in the outflow from the Filchner Depression.

If we consider water lying along the bottom of the continental shelf instead of the vertical integral, we find that the salinity change of bottom water precursors is predominantly due to a net reduction in ice shelf melting. Figure 5.11 is the evolution of salinity tracers on the bottom of the continental shelf as temperature decreases in the numerical experiments. The bottom is the partially or fully water-filled grid cell above a completely land-filled cell. The computation of salinity changes in Fig. 5.11 accounts for grid-cell volume, unlike the salinity change implied by Fig. 5.4. We do not consider water inside ice shelf cavities, as typically this water is significantly modified by the time it reaches the shelf break. After applying these filters, the water we consider is a layer on average 67 m thick. For reference, typical observed overflow plume thicknesses in Antarctica can be anywhere from 30 to 200 m (Muench et al., 2009). In Θ_0/S space, this continental shelf water roughly corresponds to the high salinity water lying along the surface freezing line shown in Fig. 5.4 — analogous to modern ISW and HSSW. The 0.3 g kg^{-1} change in salinity as suggested by Fig. 5.4 might not have represented a large volume of water, but

when volume is accounted for, the bottom water increase in salinity is still 0.3 g kg^{-1}. Together Figs. 5.10 and 5.11 demonstrate that, in our experiments, cooling continental shelf source waters increases the salinity of bottom water precursors, and this is primarily due to reduced net ice shelf basal melting.

In contrast, the majority of the changes in the sea ice tracer occur away from the continental shelf and are due to an increase in average sea ice area and thickness in this region. Sea ice changes dominate the changes in salinity north of the shelf break. This increased sea ice cover north of the continental shelf break salinifies the water that would be entrained into the continental shelf overflow on its path to the bottom of the sea, although model issues prevent us from seeing how this evolves. This would reduce the density contrast between continental shelf water masses and open ocean water, and would mitigate the freshening effect of entrainment. That is, an increase in salinity off the shelf would help retain the high salinity signature of the shelf water masses throughout the shelf overflow's transformation to bottom water. In the control integration (and modern ocean) the continental shelf is perennially covered in sea ice, so the surface ocean is already at the freezing point. Under these conditions, decreasing the ocean temperature further does not have a large effect on sea ice thickness.

Over the continental shelf, significant changes in sea ice, and the resultant salinity modifications, would require a large decrease in atmospheric temperature or an increase in export velocity. Lower atmospheric temperature and higher wind stress would increase the bulk heat flux between ocean and atmosphere, enabling an increase in the thickness or formation rate of sea ice. Alternatively the higher wind stress could remove thicker sea ice with the same area, or could enable faster removal of sea ice from the continental shelves, either of which would increase the net freshwater export rate. Both scenarios are certainly possible at the LGM. Atmospheric temperature and export velocities of sea ice are the same for all experiments, so the primary way for ice export to increase in our experiments is through an increase in ice thickness.

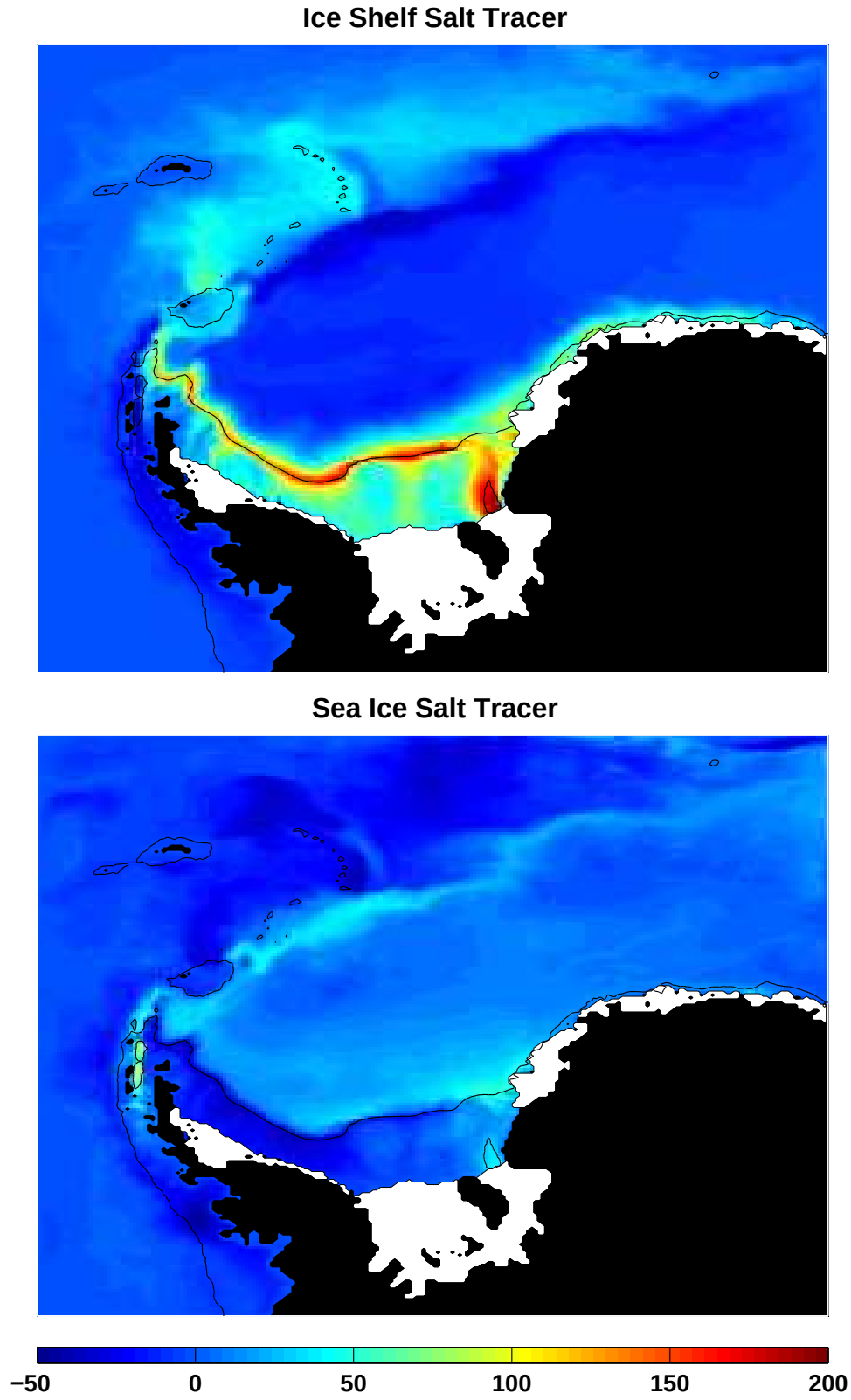


Figure 5.10: Depth integrated salt tracer fields for the sensitivity experiment in which the boundaries are cooled 40% towards the freezing point from the control experiment ($\eta = 0.4$). Color values are in m g kg^{-1} and represent the difference between the sensitivity and control experiments. All are 10-year averages. Black shaded area is land, white shaded area is ice shelves and the black contour line represents the location of the 1000-m bottom depth contour.

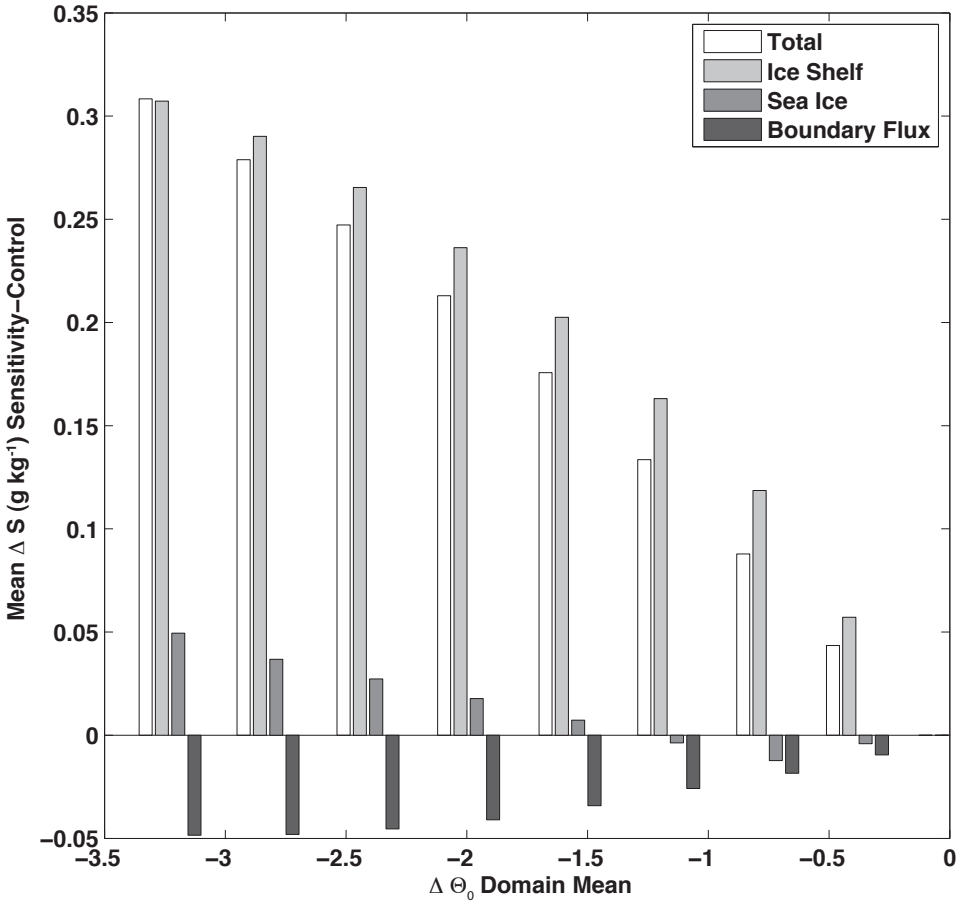


Figure 5.11: Ice shelf and sea ice salinity tracer values integrated over the bottom water-filled layer on the continental shelf. All values represent the 10-year-averaged difference between sensitivity and control. The boundaries of the continental shelf are taken as the area between the ice shelf front and the 1000-m depth contour, shown in Fig. 5.2, excluding land to the north and/or west of the Antarctic Peninsula.

5.3.3 Diagnosis of Water Mass Changes – Regional Differences in Ice Shelves

Although the shapes and sizes of the ice shelves are fixed in our experiments, they vary across the numerical domain. The smaller, shallower, ice shelves to the east of the Filchner-Ronne Ice Shelf are more sensitive to changes in the boundary temperature forcing. Comparing the total melt rate of the large ice shelves with that of the smaller ice shelves in the east of our numerical domain (Fig. 5.12), we find that there is a greater cumulative flux of meltwater from the small eastern shelves than from the large shelves, except in the coldest experiment. This does not mean that all of this water makes it into the Weddell Sea proper; the majority is so buoyant that it rises to the surface and is exported from the domain.

The large change in freshwater flux from the eastern shelves is not the determining factor in our results. With our current tools we can not distinguish the geographical source of the ice shelf salinity forcing in our salt tracers. However, we can compute the reduction in freshwater flux from different regions required to cause the changes in salt tracers on the continental shelf. The volume of water we consider to define the continental shelf (up to the 1000-m contour) is 3.77 $\times 10^{13}$ m^3. Assuming a typical density of salt water of 1027.5 kg m^{-3} and that of glacial meltwater of 999.8 kg m^{-3}, a maximum change in salinity of 0.3 g kg^{-1}, and using the model salt-to-freshwater conversion factor of 33.4 g kg^{-1}, we find that a net 3.48 $\times 10^{11}$ m^3 of meltwater is required to explain the maximum difference in salinity between the control and the coldest experiment. If the residence time of these waters on the shelf is one year, that corresponds to a difference in freshwater input of 3.48 $\times 10^{11}$ m^3 yr^{-1}. If instead the continental shelf water is completely renewed only every 10 years, the difference in freshwater flux required to maintain this salinity difference between the two experiments is an order of magnitude smaller. The maximum difference in freshwater flux magnitude from the western ice shelves is only 2.83 $\times 10^{10}$ m^3 yr^{-1}, which means that unless the residence time of water on the shelf is more than 10 years, some change in freshwater flux from the eastern ice shelves is necessary to explain the observed changes in our experiments. This is expected, because our definition of the continental shelf includes the shelf directly in front of the eastern ice shelves. The combined shelf

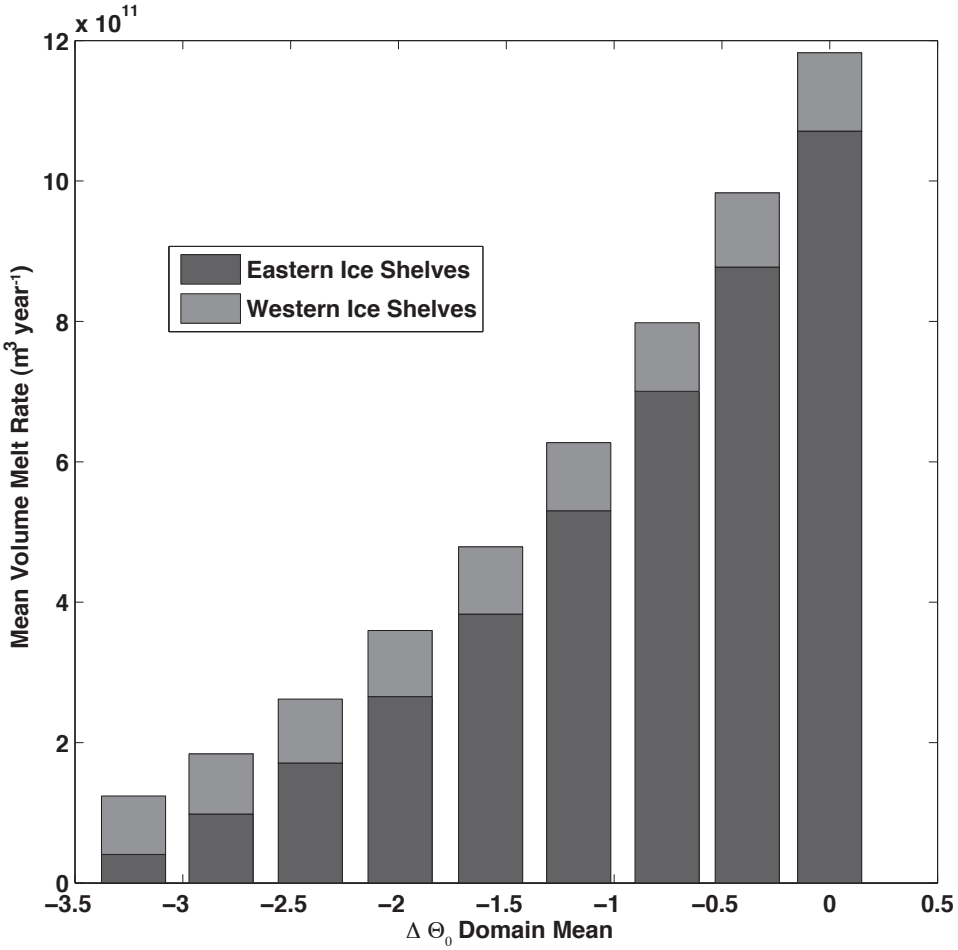


Figure 5.12: Comparison of time-averaged and spatially-integrated volume melt rate of ice shelves in western and eastern sectors of domain. The western sector corresponds to the Filchner-Ronne Ice Shelf and all ice shelves in the Western Weddell Sea. The eastern sector is all ice shelves to the east of the Filchner-Ronne Ice Shelf. All values represent the 10-year-average of a spatial integration.

area in front of the eastern ice shelves is only 1/3 of the continental shelf area lying inside the Weddell Sea, so for the eastern shelf change to impose a bias on our average result, there would need to be an excessive change in salinity. However, our average continental shelf answer is not biased by a large change over the eastern continental shelves. Rather the maximum (coldest experiment) average change in ice shelf salinity tracer over the continental shelf abutting the eastern ice shelves is only 0.25 g/kg, whereas over the main continental shelf in the Weddell Sea proper, the change is 0.33 g/kg.

Hypothetically, if a reduction in eastern melt rates was large enough, the increase in salinity, besides affecting western shelf processes, could also enable direct bottom water

formation from the eastern continental shelves. Today, water formed through interactions with the eastern ice shelves does find its way onto the continental shelves in the Weddell Sea. By preconditioning the water properties that enter the Weddell Sea, the eastern shelf interactions indirectly affect the bottom water formation processes to the west, although the relative magnitude of the eastern shelf contribution is still uncertain (Nicholls et al., 2009). However, the extremely low salinity in front of the eastern ice shelves suppresses direct bottom water formation (Fahrbach et al., 1994).

5.3.4 Relevance to Glacial Oceans

We do not simulate the LGM. As such, it is difficult to compare our sensitivity experiments to data, because we have purposely not modified a large number of important variables. However, we believe that the sensitivity experiment that is most appropriate to compare to LGM data is our most extreme temperature scenario. First, the temperature changes of interest to the LGM ocean are not as large as the domain-averaged temperature suggests. The temperature change on the shelf is much smaller than the average temperature change of the whole domain, which is significant because a large volume of deep water in our domain does not interact with the continental shelf. Using the same definition of continental shelf as for the salinity tracers, we find that the average potential temperature on the continental shelf in our most extreme experiment is -2.00°C. In comparison, the average potential temperature on the continental shelf in our control is -1.65°C. The sensitivity of continental shelf salinity to continental shelf temperature is thus much higher than the sensitivity of the whole domain salinity to whole domain temperature: 0.875 g kg^{-1}/°C as opposed to 0.006 g kg^{-1}/°C. Given these considerations, a 0.3 g kg^{-1} change in salinity due to a continental shelf potential temperature decrease of 0.13°C is reasonable. It does not require unphysically cold temperatures. With a simple change in temperature we can account for 30% of the difference in salinity contrast observed between GNAIW and GSSBW.

We do not address how the temperature at the boundaries of our computational Weddell Sea domain could be depressed to such low levels. There are two possibilities: (i) either

the temperature of WDW/CDW was lower or (ii) relatively warm CDW did not intrude onto the continental shelves. Our setup does not favor one or the other of these hypotheses — we simply make the water colder. So, even if northern source deep water was not a precursor to GSSBW at the LGM, the fact that the ocean was cooler still explains a significant fraction of the high measured bottom water salinity.

5.3.5 The Effect of Unmodelled Processes

In order to focus on the sensitivity of bottom water formation to ocean temperature, we do not simulate the LGM. As previously discussed, a change in wind stress and/or atmospheric temperature could have an important role in changing the bottom water properties. In addition, there is evidence that both atmospheric temperature over Antarctica (Petit et al., 1999) and sea surface temperature in the Southern Ocean (Gersonde et al., 2005) were lower at the LGM than they are today. All of these factors could contribute to increasing the sea ice export. Increased sea ice export from LGM deep water formation sites probably played a larger role in increasing the salinity of LGM bottom water than it does in our experiments, but we specifically did not simulate that.

Another factor that we do not consider is a change in bathymetry of the land or ice shelf cavities. However, in our experiments the smaller ice shelves showed the greatest change in melt rate in the experiments. Isolated ice shelf cavity process studies also indicate that ice shelf basal melting depends strongly on ice sheet morphology (Little et al., 2009). This is significant to inferred ice shelf conditions at the LGM. Reconstructions of the LGM Antarctic ice sheet extent suggest that the grounding line was located further north (Anderson et al., 2002) , which could mean that the ice shelves at the LGM were configured similarly to the small ice shelves located to the east of the Weddell Sea in our experiments: either shallow and abutted by a narrow continental shelf or overhanging the continental shelf break. The fact that melt rates of these smaller ice shelves are more sensitive to temperature could mean that temperature played a greater relative role in setting shelf water salinity than it does with the modern shelf configuration that we used in our experiments. In short, given the correct ice sheet and ice shelf shapes at the LGM, small

perturbations in temperature might generate a larger ice shelf salinity response.

It is important to remember that the ice sheet morphology dynamically responds to changes in ocean conditions, a factor we have neglected by using fixed-shape ice shelf cavities. The inclusion of tides, which are influenced by ice shelf cavity and continental shelf shapes, could change the total Filchner-Ronne ice shelf melt rate by an order of magnitude (Makinson et al., 2011). It is also possible that the outward migration of the ice sheet grounding line meant that there was no Antarctic continental shelf or ice shelves, in which case the bottom water formation process at the LGM would have been fundamentally different (Paillard and Parrenin, 2004).

Besides water properties, bottom water formation depends heavily on the rate of production and movement off the shelf. The modern production rate suggests that the residence time of high density water on the continental shelf is between 5 and 7 years (Gill, 1973, Gordon et al., 2010). While water does leave our domain, the open boundary configuration fixes its export rate.

5.4 Conclusions

Cooling the ocean has a significant effect on the salinity of the water lying on the continental shelf of the Weddell Sea, water that in the modern is a precursor to Antarctic Bottom Water. Pore fluid measurements find that the salinity gradient between GSSBW and GNAIW was 1.1 units greater than the gradient between AABW and NADW. With ocean cooling alone, we can explain as much as 30% of this change in salinity stratification. Almost all of this change is due to a reduction of basal melting from marine-based ice sheets over and in the vicinity of the Weddell Sea continental shelf, but a small portion can also be attributed to the export of thicker sea ice. Similar changes in ice shelf basal melting could have occurred over the other Antarctic continental shelves at the LGM, which in addition to transport and recirculation of circumpolar water masses, might have increased the contribution of this particular effect. The effect we observe in our experiments is due primarily to thermodynamics and not to a dynamic (i.e., buoyancy-driven)

response to temperature changes; while ocean temperature can not account for all of the measured salinity difference between GSSBW and AABW, it is of the same order of magnitude and must be considered as one of several important salinity drivers.

While this is a significant number, it can not explain all of the change in salinity. Among the candidates for explaining the remaining 70%, ice shelf shape and wind-driven changes in sea ice processes are likely to have significant roles. Bathymetric changes at the LGM, including the shape and exposure of the continental shelf and ice shelves, as well as their effect on tidal mixing, may have been important in setting the salinity of GSSBW. In our experiments, small ice shelves, such as those that may have existed at the LGM, were more sensitive to changes in ocean temperature than the larger ones, perhaps due to their greater exposure to open ocean conditions. In the modern ocean, this sensitivity and exposure to warm ocean conditions contribute to blocking direct bottom water formation in front of the small ice shelves, such that processes over smaller continental shelves, in front of smaller ice shelves, have only an indirect role in bottom water formation. In a reduced open ocean temperature environment this constraint might have been lifted, such that significant bottom water formation could have occurred in front of small ice shelves. With a narrow and more spatially homogeneous continental shelf ringing the Antarctic continent, bottom water formation may have been more geographically distributed than it is today. Decreased atmospheric temperature and increased wind stress near the Antarctic continent also may have contributed to an increased salinity flux from sea ice formation and export. Our experiments show that a decrease in ocean temperature alone does not significantly increase the ocean salinification due to sea ice export, in part because greater sea ice cover reduces ocean evaporation. Due to the limitations of a regional model in representing water export rates, future studies on this subject should investigate the feedback between changes in property (Θ_0, S) and density stratification in a circumpolar or global configuration.

Table 5.1: Abbreviations used in text

Abbreviation	Full Name	Description
AABW	Antarctic Bottom Water	bottom water originating from Antarctica traced to 40 °N
ACC	Antarctic Circumpolar Current	ocean current system that circumnavigates the Antarctic Continent
ASW	Antarctic Surface Water	surface water around Antarctica that interacts directly with the atmosphere
CDW	Circumpolar Deep Water	intermediate water mass of ACC
ESW	Eastern Shelf Water	product of CDW and meltwater from the eastern Weddell ice shelves
FRIS	Filchner-Ronne Ice Shelf	largest ice shelf in Weddell Sea, largest ice shelf (by volume) in Antarctica
GNAIW	Glacial North Atlantic Intermediate Water	northern source intermediate water that existed during the LGM - corresponds roughly to modern NADW, but existed at shallower depths with modified properties
GSSBW	Glacial Southern Source Bottom Water	southern source bottom water that existed during the LGM
HSSW	High Salinity Shelf Water	water formed on continental shelves of Antarctica through sea ice formation, $S > 34.5$
ISW	Ice Shelf Water	water formed in sub-ice shelf cavities - defined as water with potential temperature lower than the surface freezing point ($<\approx -1.9°C$)
LGM	Last Glacial Maximum	time period corresponding to most recent relative maximum of continental ice sheet size, $\approx$ 20,000 years before present
MWDW	Modified Warm Deep Water	transition water mass between WW and WDW, likely source of continental shelf water masses
NADW	North Atlantic Deep Water	water mass that originates from North Atlantic, identifiable in global ocean data sets as a deep salinity maximum
WDW	Warm Deep Water	modified form of CDW found in Weddell Sea identified by temperature and salinity maximum around 300–600 m
WSDW	Weddell Sea Deep Water	water in Weddell Sea that lies above WSBW and outflows to become AABW
WSBW	Weddell Sea Bottom Water	deepest water mass in Weddell Sea, densest and coldest water mass around Antarctica, contributes eventually to AABW after mixing upward to become WSDW
WW	Winter Water	water mass defining winter mixed layer of Weddell Sea formed from underlying WDW and brine rejection

Chapter 6

Concluding remarks

In this thesis, we used a combination of idealized ocean modeling, geological records, and both traditional regularized least squares optimization and Bayesian MCMC parameter estimation inverse methods to shed light on an outstanding puzzle about past ocean density stratification.

With inferences from sediment pore fluid profiles of [Cl^-] and $\delta^{18}O$, Adkins et al. (2002) inferred that the LGM ocean had a wider range of densities than the modern ocean, and that the ocean density stratification was set by salinity. In contrast, the modern ocean stratification is controlled by temperature. This result was a major scientific advance, as it provided the first evidence that the ocean was more physically stratified in the past. Such strong physical stratification could explain other records showing major spatial contrasts in ocean chemistry at the LGM.

While Adkins et al. (2002)'s results were revolutionary, they left many questions unanswered. How did the deep ocean's density, which today is controlled by temperature, become a function of salinity? What did this imply about the ocean circulation? How did the ocean density stratification evolve from the LGM to the present? By answering these questions we could make significant progress towards understanding how the ocean interacts with the climate system over long timescales. We have sought to answer these questions in this thesis.

How could density variations in the ocean be primarily determined by salinity, and

are LGM temperatures and salinities linked? Using a state-of-the-art ocean model, we investigated whether ocean temperature, through its effect on ice–ocean interactions, could induce the inferred LGM salinity stratification. Using the Weddell Sea as a case study, we explored the impact of lower ocean temperatures on Antarctic ice–ocean interactions. We found that changes in ice-shelf–ocean interactions due to temperature alone lead to a significant increase in the salinity of water that feeds the deepest ocean. Our results show that the maximum possible salinity due to temperature change could only account for part of the inferred deep ocean salinity stratification in Adkins et al. (2002), which means one of several possibilities. Another process, such as increased export of sea ice due to a change in wind patterns, may have contributed to the inferred high salinity bottom water. While it is very likely that the sea ice export was greater at the LGM due to changes in the wind, wind patterns are even more difficult to reconstruct than deep ocean temperature. Alternatively, the model may not properly represent the cold ocean state. Finally, the inferred salinity at the LGM may have been overestimated. That said, our work demonstrates that ocean temperature, through its interaction with ice shelves, can have a significant role in changing the salinity and density stratification of the deep ocean. This insight is new; previously the interaction between ice shelves and the ocean had been largely ignored as an important player in past ocean stratification changes.

The evidence for glacial salinity stratification presented in Adkins et al. (2002) is a sparse data set. To determine whether this small set of points is representative of the entire ocean, we have worked to increase the number of and our ability to make measurements. Obtaining high depth resolution sediment pore fluid samples for $[Cl^-]$ and $\delta^{18}O$ measurement and inversion is limited by the current interstitial water recovery method, which destroys large sections of ocean sediment cores, disrupting the chronology of other records. We tested whether Rhizon samplers, a non-destructive tool developed for terrestrial soil sampling, can recover water from deep ocean sediments at high depth resolution. Rhizons were unable to be used in the very deepest, highly compacted ocean sediments. In less compacted sediments, the Rhizons caused contamination of the chloride concentration and oxygen isotope values, making them unsuitable for our purposes.

Oxygen isotopes and chloride concentration in ocean sediment interstitial fluid record the

integrated history of the water properties at the water–sediment interface, not only those at the LGM, and the effects of diffusion and advection in the sediments. Thus, recovery of LGM bottom water properties requires inverting the profiles. Previous inversion methods applied to this problem led to a systematic offset between data and model, indicating possible errors in the reported solutions. Further, these previous approaches only allowed for the solution of the salinity or δ^{18}O at the LGM, despite the fact that the profile is set by the temporal evolution of bottom water and not solely the value at the LGM. We aimed to find a robust inverse method that would allow us to extract the full information content of the pore fluid profiles, including the evolution of [Cl^-] and δ^{18}O from the LGM to present.

We showed that traditional regularized least squares inverse methods are unsuitable for this task as they recover only one solution to a non-unique problem, are very sensitive to noise in the data, and it is impossible to robustly quantify the error associated with the solution they recover. We instead turned to Bayesian Markov Chain Monte Carlo parameter estimation methods to reconstruct the histories of δ^{18}O and [Cl^-] from modern pore fluid profiles. Relying on a highly parallelized sampler, CATMIP, we can solve simultaneously for unknown sediment properties, such as diffusivity, in addition to the history of δ^{18}O and salinity. Our new Bayesian approach is a major improvement over the previous method, because it weaves our uncertainty about past physical parameters into the fabric of the problem, and is much less sensitive to noise than regularized least squares inversions.

Our preliminary results suggest that that the deep ocean was indeed more salinity stratified at the LGM, however the LGM salinity stratification may have been smaller than previously reported. Encouragingly, [Cl^-] and δ^{18}O between the LGM and present day can be reconstructed with even higher confidence than their values at the LGM. Our current evidence hints at a striking dichotomy between the Pacific and Atlantic in their deep ocean water mass evolution during the deglaciation and Holocene. Measurements at more ocean sediment core sites will improve our ability to constrain the global water mass and deep ocean density evolution between the LGM and today.

We need to find a way to markedly increase the number of high quality measurements of

sediment pore fluid chloride and oxygen isotopes, as we still lack suitable alternative ways to reconstruct ocean temperature and salinity. We expect that increased use of emerging remotely operated ocean drilling technologies, such as the MeBo, will afford a marked increase in the global spatial density of pore fluid profiles.

Appendix A

Titration methods for [Cl$^-$] measurement

A.1 Theory

The [Cl$^-$] of each sample is measured by titration against silver nitrate. I measure the progression of this reaction potentiometrically. The basic reaction is:

$$[Cl^-] + [Ag^+] \rightleftharpoons [AgCl]_{(s)}\,. \tag{A.1}$$

The chloride concentration of the sample is determined by the equivalence-point of the reaction: when an equivalent amount of silver nitrate reagent to the amount of chloride in solution has been added. There is an electrode in the titrant and the sample solution, and I measure the voltage difference across these two. To close the circuit, the tip of the titrant buret is placed in the sample beaker, which also protects against issues with surface tension. That is, as the micrometer is advanced, a drop of solution does not have to separate from the tip of the buret to enter the sample. At any given time, the voltage drop measured across the two solutions is equal to the difference in potential on each electrode, defined by the Nernst equation

$$E = -\frac{RT}{nF} lnQ\,, \tag{A.2}$$

where R is the gas constant, T the absolute temperature, n is the number of electrons reacting at the electrode, F is the Faraday constant (charge on one gram equivalent of an ion) and Q is proportional to the activity of the ion to which the electrode is sensitive. The electrodes used are almost pure silver, which are sensitive to the silver ion activity through the surface reaction

$$Ag_{(s)} \rightleftharpoons Ag^{+} + e^{-} \,. \tag{A.3}$$

As the titration reaction proceeds in the beaker, the silver ion activity goes from ~ 0 to a larger number, controlled by equilibrium with the silver chloride that precipitates out. The result of this increase in silver ion activity in my sample mean that the voltage drop across the electrodes is decreasing throughout each measurement. In my methodology, the practical difference between activity and concentration is negligible.

A.2 Equipment

The voltage drop progression is measured using a National Instruments USB-6210 Multifunction DAQ. I sample the measurements using LabVIEW. Because there is a significant amount of background noise in our lab, I filter by averaging 80 samples taken at a frequency of 800 Hz. This is not a unique choice, but it should bypass the typical building power frequency noise at 50 or 60 Hz.

The micrometer is attached to an Applied Motion stepper motor. The motor is also driven through LabVIEW, allowing me to automate the titration procedure except for loading the sample and titrant.

During the titration, the solution is stirred using a mini stir bar and plate.

A.3 Standards

To determine the chloride concentration of an unknown sample, I weigh out a sample and then titrate to the equivalence point. Once I know the volume of silver nitrate added to the sample and the weight of the sample, determining the concentration simply requires knowing the precise concentration of silver nitrate.

I know the rough concentration of the silver nitrate from preparation, but to have a more precise knowledge of its concentration I calibrate my silver nitrate by titrating a known standard.

My standard is the IAPSO P-Series Normal Standard Seawater (S=35). Because there is high evaporation in Southern California, once I open a standard I store it with parafilm around the top and inside a glass jar that is $\sim$ one third full of water. I use a standard for a maximum of 2 weeks. When I open a new standard I compare the old values to the new ones. I also measure a consistency standard in triplicate every day that I am making measurements to ensure that there is no significant evaporation of my standard. My consistency standard is low salinity $\sim$ 33 g kg^{-1} surface seawater from the N. Pacific, in the vicinity of Hydrate Ridge.

Bibliography

A. Adcroft, C. Hill, and J. Marshall. The representation of topography by shaved cells in a height coordinate model. *Monthly Weather Review*, 125(9):2293–2315, 1997. 174

J. F. Adkins. The role of deep ocean circulation in setting glacial climates. *Paleoceanography*, August 2013. doi: 10.1002/palo.20046. 3

J. F. Adkins, K. McIntyre, and D. P. Schrag. The salinity, temperature and δ^{18}O of the glacial deep ocean. *Science*, 298(5599):1769–1773, 2002. xxii, 7, 8, 9, 12, 13, 14, 29, 62, 77, 78, 90, 128, 130, 134, 169, 202, 203

J.F. Adkins and Daniel P Schrag. Reconstructing Last Glacial Maximum bottom water salinities from deep-sea sediment pore fluid profiles. *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 216:109–123, 2003. doi: 10.1016/S0012-821X(03)00502-8. 18

R. F. Adler, G. J. Huffman, A. Chang, R. Ferraro, P. Xie, J. Janowiak, B. Rudolf, U. Schneider, S. Curtis, D. Bolvin, A. Gruber, J. Susskind, P. Arkin, and E. Nelkin. The version-2 global precipitation climatology project (gpcp) monthly precipitation analysis (1979-present). *Journal of Hydrometeorology*, 4:1147–1167, 2003. 177

J. B. Anderson, S. S. Shipp, A. L. Lowe, J. S. Wellner, and A. B. Mosola. The Antarctic Ice Sheet during the Last Glacial Maximum and its subsequent retreat history: a review. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 21:49–70, 2002. 198

Antonov et al. *World Ocean Atlas 209, Volume 2: Salinity*. U.S. Government Printing Office, Washington, D.C., 2010. 74, 178

U. M. Ascher, S. J. Ruuth, and B. T. R. Wetton. Implicit-Explicit Methods for Time-

Dependent Partial Differential Equations. *SIAM Journal on Numerical Analysis*, 32 (3):797–823, 1995. 20, 69

R. C. Aster, B. Borchers, and C. H. Thurber. *Parameter Estimation and Inverse Problems*. Elsevier Academic Press, 2005. 21

E. Bard, B. Hamelin, and R. G. Fairbanks. U-Th ages obtained by mass spectrometry in corals from Barbados: sea level during the past 130,000 years. *Nature*, 346:456–458, 1990a. 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 143, 144

E. Bard, B. Hamelin, R. G. Fairbanks, and A. Zindler. Calibration of the ^{14}C timescale over the past 30,000 years using mass spectrometric U-Th ages from Barbados corals. *Nature*, 345:405–410, 1990b. 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 143, 144

E. Bard, B. Hamelin, M. Arnold, L. Montaggioni, G. Cabioch, G. Faure, and F. Rougerie. Deglacial sea-level record from Tahiti corals and the timing of global meltwater discharge. *Nature*, 382:241–244, 1996. 132, 137, 138, 139, 140

J. W. Beck, D. A. Richards, R. L. Edwards, B. W. Silverman, P. L. Smart, D. J. Donahue, S. Hererra-Osterheld, G. S. Burr, L. Calsoyas, A. J. Jull, and D. Biddulph. Extremely large variations of atmospheric ^{14}C concentration during the last glacial period. *Science*, 292:2453–8, 2001. doi: 10.1126/science.1056649. 2

R. A. Berner. *Early Diagenesis: A Theoretical Approach*. Princeton University Press, 1980. 14, 17, 19, 69

B. P. Boudreau. *Diagenetic Models and Their Implementation: Modelling Transport and Reaction in Aquatic Sediments*. Springer-Verlag, 1997. 14, 17

B. P. Boudreau and F. J. R. Meysman. Predicted tortuosity of muds. *Geology*, 34(8):693, 2006. doi: 10.1130/G22771.1. 19

N. Bouttes, D.M. Roche, and D. Paillard. Impact of strong deep ocean stratification on the glacial carbon cycle. *Paleoceanography*, 24(3):1–11, 2009. 169

N. Bouttes, D. Paillard, and D.M. Roche. Impact of brine-induced stratification on the glacial carbon cycle. *Climate of the Past*, 6(5):575–589, 2010. 169

E. A. Boyle. Cadmium: chemical tracer of deepwater paleoceanography. *Paleoceanography*, 3(4):471–489, 1988. 3

E. A. Boyle. Cadmium and δ^{13}C paleochemical ocean distributions during the Stage 2 Glacial Maximum. *Annual Review of Earth and Planetary Sciences*, 20:245–287, 1992. 3, 4

P. Braconnot, B. Otto-Bliesner, S. Harrison, S. Joussaume, J.-Y. Peterchmitt, A. Abe-Ouchi, M. Crucifix, E. Driesschaert, Th. Fichefet, C. D. Hewitt, M. Kageyama, A. Kitoh, A. Laîné, M.-F. Loutre, O. Marti, U. Merkel, G. Ramstein, P. Valdes, S. L. Weber, Y. Yu, and Y. Zhao. Results of PMIP2 coupled simulations of the Mid-Holocene and Last Glacial Maximum Part 1: experiments and large-scale features. *Climate of the Past*, 3(2):261–277, June 2007. ISSN 1814-9332. doi: 10.5194/cp-3-261-2007. URL http://www.clim-past.net/3/261/2007/. 1

W. Broecker and S. Barker. A 190 ‰ drop in atmosphere's Δ^{14}C during the "Mystery Interval"(17.5 to 14.5 kyr). *Earth and Planetary Science Letters*, 256(1-2):90–99, 2007. doi: 10.1016/j.epsl.2007.01.015. 2, 12

W. S. Broecker and G. H. Denton. The role of ocean-atmosphere reorganizations in glacial cycles. *Geochimica et Cosmochimica Acta*, 53(10):2465–2501, 1989. doi: 10.1016/0016-7037(89)90123-3. 2

A. W. Bruckner. Proceedings of the Caribbean Acropora Workshop: Potential Application of the U.S. Endangered Species Act as a Conservation Strategy. In *NMFS-OPR-24, NOAA Technical Memorandum*, pages 1–199, Silver Spring, MD, 2002. 132

A. Burke and L. F. Robinson. The Southern Ocean's role in carbon exchange during the last deglaciation. *Science*, 335(6068):557–61, 2012. doi: 10.1126/science.1208163. 2

J. Chappell and N. J. Shackleton. Oxygen isotopes and sea level. *Nature*, 324(13):137–140, 1986. 73, 172

J. Chappell, A. Omura, T. Esat, M. McCulloch, J. Pandolfi, Y. Ota, and B. Pillans. Reconciliation of late Quaternary sea levels derived from coral terraces at Huon

Peninsula with deep sea oxygen isotope records. *Earth and Planetary Science Letters*, 141:227–236, 1996. 140

C. D. Charles and R. G. Fairbanks. Evidence from Southern Ocean sediments for the effect of North Atlantic deep-water flux on climate. *Nature*, 355:416–419, 1992. 4

J. H. Chen, H. A. Curran, B. White, and G. J. Wasserburg. Precise chronology of the last interglacial period: U- ^{230}Th data from fossil coral reefs in the Bahamas. *Geological Society of America Bulletin*, 103:82–97, 1991. 142, 143, 144, 145

P. U. Clark, A. S. Dyke, J. D. Shakun, A. E. Carlson, J. Clark, B. Wohlfarth, J. X. Mitrovica, S. W. Hostetler, and A. M. McCabe. The Last Glacial Maximum. *Science*, 325(5941):710–4, 2009. doi: 10.1126/science.1172873. 15

CLIMAP Project Members. The surface of the ice-age earth. *Science*, 191(4232):1131–1137, 1976. URL http://www.jstor.org/stable/1741505. 1

L. B. Collins, Z. R. Zhu, K.-H. Wyrwoll, B. G. Hatcher, P. E. Playford, J. H. Chen, A. Eisenhauer, and G. J. Wasserburg. Late Quaternary evolution of coral reefs on a cool-water carbonate margin: the Abrolhos Carbonate Platforms, southwest Australia. *Marine Geology*, 110:203–212, 1993a. 137, 141, 144

L. B. Collins, Z. R. Zhu, K.-H. Wyrwoll, B. G. Hatcher, P. E. Playford, A. Eisenhauer, J. H Chen, G. J Wasserburg, and G. Bonani. Holocene growth history of a reef complex on a cool-water carbonate margin: Easter Group of the Houtman Abrolhos, Eastern Indian Ocean. *Marine Geology*, 115(1-2):29–46, 1993b. doi: 10.1016/0025-3227(93)90073-5. 137, 138

F. H. Ortega Culaciati. *Aseismic Deformation in Subduction Megathrusts: Central Andes and North-East Japan*. PhD Dissertation, California Institute of Technology, 2013. 53, 54

W. B. Curry and D. W. Oppo. Glacial water mass geometry and the distribution of δ^{13}C of $\sum CO_2$ in the western Atlantic Ocean. *Paleoceanography*, 20(1), 2005. 4

K. B. Cutler et al. Rapid sea-level fall and deep-ocean temperature change since the last interglacial period. *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 206:253–271, 2003. 172

W. Dansgaard and H. Tauber. Glacier Oxygen-18 Content and Pleistocene Ocean Temperatures. *Science*, 166(3904):499–502, 1969. 73

A. de Vernal, F. Eynaud, M. Henry, C. Hillaire-Marcel, L. Londeix, S. Mangin, J. Matthiessen, F. Marret, T. Radi, A. Rochon, S. Solignac, and J.-L. Turon. Reconstruction of sea-surface conditions at middle to high latitudes of the Northern Hemisphere during the Last Glacial Maximum (LGM) based on dinoflagellate cyst assemblages. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 24(7-9):897–924, 2005. doi: 10.1016/j.quascirev.2004.06.014. 8

A. de Vernal, A. Rosell-Melé, M. Kucera, C. Hillaire-Marcel, F. Eynaud, M. Weinelt, T. Dokken, and M. Kageyama. Comparing proxies for the reconstruction of LGM sea-surface conditions in the northern North Atlantic. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 25 (21-22):2820–2834, 2006. doi: 10.1016/j.quascirev.2006.06.006. 6

G. R. Dickens, M. Koelling, D. C. Smith, and L. Schnieders. Rhizon Sampling of Pore Waters on Scientific Drilling Expeditions: An Example from the IODP Expedition 302, Arctic Coring Expedition (ACEX). *Scientific Drilling*, 4, 2007. doi: 10.2204/iodp.sd.4.08.2007. 149

R. R. Dickson and J. Brown. The production of North Atlantic Deep Water: Sources, rates and pathways. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 99(C6):12319–12341, 1994. 77

J. DiMarzio, A. C. Brenner, R. Schutz, C. A. Shuman, and H. J. Zwally. GLAS/ICESat 500 m laser altimetry digital elevation model of Antarctica, 2008. 173

S. M. Downes, A. Gnanadesikan, S. M. Griffies, and J. L. Sarmiento. Water mass exchange in the Southern Ocean in coupled climate models. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 2011. doi: 10.1175/2011JPO4586.1. 180

J. Duplessy, L. Labeyrie, and C. Waelbroeck. Constraints on the ocean oxygen isotopic enrichment between the Last Glacial Maximum and the Holocene: Paleoceanographic implications. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 21(1-3):315–330, 2002. doi: 10.1016/S0277-3791(01)00107-X. 74, 75

J. C. Duplessy, N. J. Shackleton, R. G. Fairbanks, L. Labeyrie, D. Oppo, and N. Kallel. Deepwater source variations during the last climatic cycle and their impact on the global deepwater circulation. *Paleoceanography*, 3(3):343–360, 1988. 4

J. C. Duplessy, E. Bard, M. Arnold, N. J. Shackleton, J. Duprat, and L. Labeyrie. How fast did the ocean-atmosphere system run during the last deglaciation? *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 103:27–40, 1991. 77

R. L. Edwards, F. W. Taylor, and G. J. Wasserburg. Dating earthquakes with high-precision Thorium-230 ages of very young corals. *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 90(4):371–381, 1988. doi: 10.1016/0012-821X(88)90136-7. 143, 144

R. L. Edwards, J. W. Beck, G. S. Burr, D. J. Donahue, J. M. Chappell, A. L. Bloom, E. R. Druffel, and F. W. Taylor. A Large Drop in Atmospheric $^{14}C/^{12}C$ and Reduced Melting in the Younger Dryas, Documented with ^{230}Th Ages of Corals. *Science*, 260: 962–8, 1993. doi: 10.1126/science.260.5110.962. 137, 138, 139, 140

J. M. Eiler. Paleoclimate reconstruction using carbonate clumped isotope thermometry. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 30(25-26):3575–3588, 2011. doi: 10.1016/j.quascirev.2011.09.001. 6, 7

H. Elderfield and R. Rickaby. Oceanic Cd/P ratio and nutrient utilization in the glacial Southern Ocean. *Nature*, 405(6784):305–10, 2000. doi: 10.1038/35012507. 3, 4

H. Elderfield, J. Yu, P. Anand, T. Kiefer, and B. Nyland. Calibrations for benthic foraminiferal Mg/Ca paleothermometry and the carbonate ion hypothesis. *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 250(3-4):633–649, 2006. doi: 10.1016/j.epsl.2006.07.041. 6

H. Elderfield, P. Ferretti, M. Greaves, S. Crowhurst, I. N. McCave, D. Hodell, and A. M. Piotrowski. Evolution of ocean temperature and ice volume through the mid-Pleistocene climate transition. *Science*, 337(6095):704–9, 2012. doi: 10.1126/science.1221294. 6

C. Emiliani. Paleotemperature analysis of Caribbean cores P6304-8 and P6304-9 and a generalized temperature curve for the past 425,000 years. *The Journal of Geology*, 74 (2):109–126, 1966. 73

T. M. Esat, M. T. McCulloch, J. Chappell, B. Pillans, and A. Omura. Rapid Fluctuations in Sea Level Recorded at Huon Peninsula During the Penultimate Deglaciation. *Science*, 283:197–201, 1999. doi: 10.1126/science.283.5399.197. 141, 145, 146

E. Fahrbach, R.G. Peterson, G. Rohardt, P. Schlosser, and R. Bayer. Bottom water formation in the southeastern Weddell Sea. *Deep Sea Research Part I*, 41(2):389–411, 1994. 197

E. Fahrbach, G. Rohardt, N. Scheele, M. Schröder, V. Strass, and A. Wisotzki. Formation and discharge of deep and bottom water in the northwestern Weddell Sea. *Journal of Marine Research*, 53(4):515–538, 1995. 170

R. G. Fairbanks. A 17,000-year glacio-eustatic sea level record: influence of glacial melting rates on the Younger Dryas event and deep-ocean circulation. *Nature*, 342:637–642, 1989. 73

R. G. Fairbanks, R. A. Mortlock, T.-C. Chiu, L. Cao, A. Kaplan, T. P. Guilderson, T. W. Fairbanks, A. L. Bloom, P. M. Grootes, and M.-J. Nadeau. Radiocarbon calibration curve spanning 0 to 50,000 years BP based on paired ^{230}Th/^{234}U/^{238}U and ^{14}C dates on pristine corals. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 24(16-17):1781–1796, 2005. doi: 10.1016/j.quascirev.2005.04.007. 2

A. Foldvik, T. Gammelsrød, S. Østerhus, E. Fahrbach, G. Rohardt, M. Schröder, K. W. Nicholls, L. Padman, and R. A. Woodgate. Ice shelf water overflow and bottom water formation in the southern Weddell Sea. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 109(C2):1–15, 2004. 170

M. Frank, B. Schwarz, S. Baumann, P. W. Kubik, M. Suter, and A. Mangini. A 200 kyr record of cosmogenic radionuclide production rate and geomagnetic field intensity from Be-10 in globally stacked deep-sea sediments. *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 149:121–129, 1997. 2

C. D. Gallup, R. L. Edwards, and R. G. Johnson. The timing of high sea levels over the past 200,000 years. *Science*, 263(5148):796–800, 1994. doi: 10.1126/science.263.5148.796. 141, 145

J. R. Gat. Oxygen and Hydrogen Isotopes in the Hydrologic Cycle. *Annual Review of Earth and Planetary Sciences*, 24(1):225–262, 1996. doi: 10.1146/annurev.earth.24.1.225. 162

G. Gebbie. Tracer transport timescales and the observed Atlantic-Pacific lag in the timing of the Last Termination. *Paleoceanography*, 27(3), 2012. doi: 10.1029/2011PA002273. 13

P. R. Gent and J. C. McWilliams. Isopycnal mixing in ocean circulation models. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 20:150–155, 1990. 173

R. Gersonde, X. Crosta, A. Abelmann, and L. Armand. Sea-surface temperature and sea ice distribution of the Southern Ocean at the EPILOG Last Glacial Maximum—a circum-Antarctic view based on siliceous microfossil records. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 24:869–896, 2005. 198

P. Ghosh, J. Adkins, H. Affek, B. Balta, W. Guo, E. A. Schauble, D. Schrag, and J. M. Eiler. ^{13}C–^{18}O bonds in carbonate minerals: A new kind of paleothermometer. *Geochimica et Cosmochimica Acta*, 70(6):1439–1456, 2006. doi: 10.1016/j.gca.2005.11.014. 6

A.E. Gill. Circulation and bottom water production in the Weddell Sea. *Deep-Sea Research*, 20(2):111–140, 1973. 199

A.L. Gordon, B. Huber, D. McKee, and M. Visbeck. A seasonal cycle in the export of bottom water from the Weddell Sea. *Nature Geoscience*, 3(8):551–556, 2010. 170, 199

A.-L. Grauel, T. W. Schmid, B. Hu, C. Bergami, L. Capotondi, L. Zhou, and S. M. Bernasconi. Calibration and application of the clumped isotope thermometer to foraminifera for high-resolution climate reconstructions. *Geochimica et Cosmochimica Acta*, 108:125–140, 2013. doi: 10.1016/j.gca.2012.12.049. 7

S.M. Griffies. The Gent-McWilliams skew flux. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 28(5):831–841, 1998. 173

P. Gupta, D. Noone, J. Galewsky, C. Sweeny, and B. H. Vaughn. Demonstration of high-precision continuous measurements of water vapor isotopologues in laboratory

and remote field deployments using wavelength-scanned cavity ring-down spectroscopy (WS-CRDS) technology. *Rapid Communications in Mass Spectrometry*, 23:2534–2542, 2009. doi: 10.1002/rcm. 153

B. L. Hall. Holocene glacial history of Antarctica and the sub-Antarctic islands. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 28:2213–2230, 2009. 171

P. C. Hansen. *Rank-Deficient and Discrete Ill-Posed Problems*. Society for Industrial and Applied Mathematics, 1998. 21, 22

P. C. Hansen and D. P. O'Leary. The Use of the L-Curve in the Regularization of Discrete Ill-Posed Problems. *SIAM Journal on Scientific Computing*, 14(6):1487–1503, 1993. doi: 10.1137/0914086. 28

S. Harms, E. Fahrbach, and V.H. Strass. Sea ice transports in the Weddell Sea. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 106(C5):9057–9073, 2001. 175

C. A. Hartin, R. A. Fine, B. M. Sloyan, L. D. Talley, T. K. Chereskin, and J. Happell. Formation rates of Subantarctic mode water and Antarctic intermediate water within the South Pacific. *Deep Sea Research Part I: Oceanographic Research Papers*, 58(5): 524–534, 2011. doi: 10.1016/j.dsr.2011.02.010. 133

J. D. Hays, J. Imbrie, and N. J. Shackleton. Variations in the Earth's Orbit: Pacemaker of the Ice Ages. *Science*, 194(4270):1121–1132, 1976. 1

H. H. Hellmer. Impact of Antarctic ice shelf basal melting on sea ice and deep ocean properties. *Geophysical Research Letters*, 31(10):1–4, 2004. 172

H. H. Hellmer and D. J. Olbers. A two-dimensional model of the thermohaline circulation under an ice shelf. *Antarctic Science*, 1(4):325–336, 1989. 175

J. J.-M. Hirschi and J. Lynch-Stieglitz. Ocean margin densities and paleoestimates of the Atlantic meridional overturning circulation: A model study. *Geochemistry, Geophysics, Geosystems*, 7(10), 2006. doi: 10.1029/2006GC001301. 5

D. M. Holland and A. Jenkins. Modelling thermodynamic ice-ocean interactions at the base of an ice shelf. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 29(8):1787–1800, 1999. 175

M. Huettel and I. T. Webster. Porewater flow in permeable sediments. In Boudreau, B. P. and Jørgensen, B. B., editor, *The Benthic Boundary Layer: Transport processes and biogeochemistry*, chapter 7. Oxford University Press, 2001. 14

K. Hughen, S. Lehman, J. Southon, J. Overpeck, O. Marchal, C. Herring, and J. Turnbull. ^{14}C activity and global carbon cycle changes over the past 50,000 years. *Science*, 303 (5655):202–7, 2004. doi: 10.1126/science.1090300. 2

K. A. Hughen, J. R. Southon, S. J. Lehman, and J. T. Overpeck. Synchronous Radiocarbon and Climate Shifts During the Last Deglaciation. *Science*, 290:1951–1954, 2000. doi: 10.1126/science.290.5498.1951. 2

P. Huybers, G. Gebbie, and O. Marchal. Can Paleoceanographic Tracers Constrain Meridional Circulation Rates? *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 37(2):394–407, 2007. doi: 10.1175/JPO3018.1. 4, 13

J. Imbrie, E. A. Boyle, S. C. Clemens, A. Duffy, W. R. Howard, G. Kukla, J. Kutzbach, D. G. Martinson, A. Mcintyre, A. Mix, B. Molfino, J. J. Morley, L. C. Peterson, N. G. Pisias, W. L. Prell, M. E. Raymo, N. J. Shackleton, and J. R. Toggweiler. On the structure and origin of major glaciation cycles: 1. Linear Responses to Milankovitch forcing. *Paleoceanography*, 7(6):701–738, 1992. 1

J. Imbrie, A. Berger, E. A. Boyle, S. C. Clemens, A. Duffy, W. R. Howard, G. Kukla, J. Kutzbach, D. G. Martinson, A. Mcintyre, A. C. Mix, B. Molfino, J. J. Morley, L. C. Peterson, N. G. Pisias, W. L. Prell, M. E. Raymo, N. J. Shackleton, and J. R. Toggweiler. On the structure and origin of major glaciation cycles 2. The 100,000-year cycle. *Paleoceanography*, 8(6):699–735, 1993. 1

D. R. Jackett, T. J. McDougall, R. Feistel, D. G. Wright, and S. M. Griffies. Algorithms for density, potential temperature, conservative temperature, and the freezing temperature of seawater. *Journal of Atmospheric and Oceanic Technology*, 23(12):1709–1728, 2006. 175, 176

A. Jenkins, H. H. Hellmer, and D. M. Holland. The role of meltwater advection in the formulation of conservative boundary conditions at an ice-ocean interface. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 31(1):285–296, 2001. 175

P. R. Johnston and R. M. Gulrajani. Selecting the corner in the L-curve approach to Tikhonov regularization. *IEEE Transactions on Biomedical Engineering*, 47(9):1293–1296, 2000. 28

I. Joughin and L. Padman. Melting and freezing beneath Filchner-Ronne Ice Shelf, Antarctica. *Geophysical Research Letters*, 30(9):1477–1481, 2003. 181

J. Jouzel, V. Masson-Delmotte, O. Cattani, G. Dreyfus, S. Falourd, G. Hoffmann, B. Minster, J. Nouet, J. M. Barnola, J. Chappellaz, H. Fischer, J. C. Gallet, S. Johnsen, M. Leuenberger, L. Loulergue, D. Luethi, H. Oerter, F. Parrenin, G. Raisbeck, D. Raynaud, A. Schilt, J. Schwander, E. Selmo, R. Souchez, R. Spahni, B. Stauffer, J. P. Steffensen, B. Stenni, T. F. Stocker, J. L. Tison, M. Werner, and E. W. Wolff. Orbital and millennial Antarctic climate variability over the past 800,000 years. *Science*, 317 (5839):793–6, August 2007. doi: 10.1126/science.1141038. 2

A. Judd and M. Hovland. *Seabed Fluid Flow*. Cambridge University Press, 2007. 14

P. D. Killworth. Mixing on the Weddell Sea continental slope. *Deep-Sea Research*, 24: 427–448, 1977. 184

F. Knox and M. B. McElroy. Changes in Atmospheric CO_2: Influence of the Marine Biota at High Latitude. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 89(D3):4629–4637, 1984. 2

P. M. Kroopnick. The distribution of ^{13}C of σCO_2 in the world oceans. *Deep-Sea Research*, 32(1):57–84, 1985. 3

E. Kunze, E. Firing, J. M. Hummon, T. K. Chereskin, and A. M. Thurnherr. Global abyssal mixing inferred from lowered ADCP shear and CTD strain profiles. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 36:1553–1576, 2006. 77

R. Kwok, A. Schweiger, D.A. Rothrock, S. Pang, and C. Kottmeier. Sea ice motion from satellite passive microwave data assessed with ERS SAR and buoy data. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 103(C4):8191–8214, 1998. 175

C. Laj, C. Kissel, A. Mazaud, E. Michel, R. Muscheler, and J. Beer. Geomagnetic field intensity, North Atlantic Deep Water circulation and atmospheric $\Delta^{14}C$ during the last 50 kyr. *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 200:177–190, 2002. 2

W. G. Large and S. G. Yeager. Diurnal to decadal global forcing for ocean and sea-ice models: The data sets and flux climatologies. Tech. Note TN-460+STR, NCAR, Boulder, CO, 2004. 178

W. G. Large, J. C. McWilliams, and S. C. Doney. Oceanic vertical mixing: A review and a model with a nonlocal boundary layer parameterization. *Reviews of Geophysics*, 32 (4):363–403, 1994. 173

W.G. Large and S. Pond. Sensible and latent heat flux measurements over the ocean. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 12:464–482, 1982. 178

W.G. Large, G. Danabasoglu, S. C. Doney, and J. C. McWilliams. Sensitivity to surface forcing and boundary layer mixing in a global ocean model: Annual-mean climatology. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 27:2418–2447, 1997. 173

J. R. Ledwell, A. J. Watson, and C. S. Law. Evidence for slow mixing across the pycnocline. *Nature*, 364:701–703, 1993. 77

S. Legg, R. W. Hallberg, and J.B. Girton. Comparison of entrainment in overflows simulated by z-coordinate, isopycnal and non-hydrostatic models. *Ocean Modelling*, 11(1–2):69–97, 2006. 180

P. LeGrand and C. Wunsch. Constraints from paleotracer data on the North Atlantic circulation during the Last Glacial Maximum. *Paleoceanography*, 10(6):1011–1045, 1995. doi: 10.1029/95PA01455. 4, 13

A. N. LeGrande and G. A. Schmidt. Global gridded data set of the oxygen isotopic composition in seawater. *Geophysical Research Letters*, 33(12):1–5, 2006. doi: 10.1029/2006GL026011. 74

Y.-H. Li and S. Gregory. Diffusion of ions in sea water and in deep-sea sediments. *Geochimica et Cosmochimica Acta*, 38:703–714, 1974. 19, 68, 78

J. Lian, D. Yao, and B. He. A New Method for Implementation of Regularization in Cortical Potential Imaging. In *Proceedings of the 20th Annual International Conference of the IEEE Engineering in Medicine and Biology Society, Vol. 20, No 4*, volume 20, pages 2155–2158, 1998. 28

L. E. Lisiecki and M. E. Raymo. Plio-Pleistocene climate evolution: trends and transitions in glacial cycle dynamics. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 26(1-2):56–69, 2007. doi: 10.1016/j.quascirev.2006.09.005. 1

C.M. Little, A. Gnanadesikan, and M. Oppenheimer. How ice shelf morphology controls basal melting. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 114(C12):1–14, 2009. 198

R.A. Locarnini et al. *World Ocean Atlas 2009, Volume 1: Temperature*. U.S. Government Printing Office, Washington, D.C., 2010. 178

N. R. Lomb. Least-Squares Frequency Analysis of Unequally Spaced Data. *Astrophysics and Space Science*, 39:447–462, 1976. 84

M. Losch. Modeling ice shelf cavities in a z coordinate ocean general circulation model. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 113(C3):1–15, 2008. 175

M. Losch, D. Menemenlis, J.-M. Campin, P. Heimbach, and C. Hill. On the formulation of sea-ice models. Part 1: Effects of different solver implementations and parameterizations. *Ocean Modelling*, 33(1–2):129–144, 2010. 175

K. R. Ludwig, D. R. Muhs, K. R. Simmons, R. B. Halley, and E. A. Shinn. Sea-level records at ∼80 ka from tectonically stable platforms: Florida and Bermuda. *Geology*, 24(3):211–214, 1996. 137, 140, 141

J. Lynch-Stieglitz. Using ocean margin density to constrain ocean circulation and surface wind strength in the past. *Geochemistry, Geophysics, Geosystems*, 2(12), 2001. doi: 10.1029/2001GC000208. URL http://doi.wiley.com/10.1029/2001GC000208. 5

J. Lynch-Stieglitz, W. B. Curry, and N. Slowey. Weaker Gulf Stream in the Florida Straits during the Last Glacial Maximum. *Nature*, 402:644–648, 1999a. 5

J. Lynch-Stieglitz, W. B. Curry, and Niall Slowey. A geostrophic transport estimate for the Florida Current from the oxygen isotope composition of benthic foraminifera. *Paleoceanography*, 14(3):360–373, 1999b. 5

J. Lynch-Stieglitz, W. B. Curry, D. W. Oppo, U. S. Ninneman, C. D. Charles, and J. Munson. Meridional overturning circulation in the South Atlantic at the last

glacial maximum. *Geochemistry Geophysics Geosystems*, 7(10), 2006. doi: 10.1029/2005GC001226. 5

J. Lynch-Stieglitz, J. Hirschi, O. Marchal, and U. Ninnemann. Prospects for reconstructing the Atlantic meridional overturning from cross-basin density estimates. *PAGES*, 16(1):28–29, 2008. doi: 10.1029/2006GC001383.Hirschi. 5

M. B. Lythe, D. G. Vaughan, and the BEDMAP Consortium. BEDMAP: A new ice thickness and subglacial topographic model of Antarctica. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 106(B6):11335–11351, 2001. 173

K. Makinson, P. R. Holland, A. Jenkins, K. W. Nicholls, and D.M. Holland. Influence of tides on melting and freezing beneath Filchner-Ronne Ice Shelf, Antarctica. *Geophysical Research Letters*, 38(6):6–11, 2011. 199

M. J. Malone, J. B. Martin, J. Schonfeld, U. S. Ninnemann, D. Nurnberg, and T. S. White. The oxygen isotopic composition and temperature of Southern Ocean bottom waters during the Last Glacial Maximum. *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 222 (1):275–283, 2004. 7, 169

F. T. Manheim, E. G. Brooks, and W. J. Winters. Description of a Hydraulic Sediment Squeezer. Technical report, Department of the Interior, U.S. Geological Survey, Woods Hole, MA, 1994. 151

O. Marchal and W. B. Curry. On the Abyssal Circulation in the Glacial Atlantic. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 38(9):2014–2037, 2008. doi: 10.1175/2008JPO3895.1. 4

T. M. Marchitto and W. S. Broecker. Deep water mass geometry in the glacial Atlantic Ocean: A review of constraints from the paleonutrient proxy Cd/Ca. *Geochemistry, Geophysics, Geosystems*, 7(12), 2006. doi: 10.1029/2006GC001323. 3, 4

T. M. Marchitto, S. J. Lehman, J. D. Ortiz, J. Flückiger, and A. van Geen. Marine radiocarbon evidence for the mechanism of deglacial atmospheric CO_2 rise. *Science*, 316:1456–9, 2007. doi: 10.1126/science.1138679. 2

K. M. Marks and W. H. F. Smith. An evaluation of publicly available global bathymetry grids. *Mar. Geophys. Res.*, 27:19–34, 2006. 173

J. Marshall, A. Adcroft, C. Hill, L. Perelman, and C. Heisey. A finite-volume, incompressible Navier-Stokes model for studies of the ocean on parallel computers. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 102(C3):5753–5766, 1997a. 173

J. Marshall, C. Hill, L. Perelman, and A. Adcroft. Hydrostatic, quasi-hydrostatic and non-hydrostatic ocean modeling. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 102(C3):5733–5752, 1997b. 173

K. Matsumoto, T. Oba, J. Lynch-Stieglitz, and H. Yamamoto. Interior hydrography and circulation of the glacial Pacific Ocean. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 21(14-15): 1693–1704, 2002. doi: 10.1016/S0277-3791(01)00142-1. 4

M. S. McCartney and L. D. Talley. Warm-to-Cold Water Conversion in the Northern North Atlantic Ocean. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 14:922–935, 1984. 77

R. E. McDuff. The chemistry of interstitial waters, Deep Sea Drilling Project Leg 86. In G. R. Heath, L. H. Burckle, A.E. D'Agostino, U. Bleil, K.-I. Horai, R.D. Jacobi, T.R. Janecek, I. Koizumi, L.A. Krissek, S. Monechi, N. Lenotre, J.J. Morley, P. Schultheiss, and A.A. Wright, editors, *Initial Reports of the Deep Sea Drilling Project*, volume 86, chapter 31, pages 675–687. U.S. Government Printing Office, Washington, D.C., 1985. doi: doi:10.2973/dsdp.proc.86.131.1985. 7, 8, 13

J. F. McManus, R. F. Anderson, W. S. Broecker, M. Q. Fleisher, and S. M. Higgins. Radiometrically determined sedimentary fluxes in the sub-polar North Atlantic during the last 140,000 years. *Earth and Planetary Science Letters*, 155:29–43, 1998. 18

D. Menemenlis, I. Fukumori, and T. Lee. Using Green's functions to calibrate an ocean general circulation model. *Monthly Weather Review*, 133(5):1224–1240, 2005. 175

D. Menemenlis et al. ECCO2: High resolution global ocean and sea ice data synthesis. *Mercator Ocean Quarterly Newsletter*, 31:13–21, 2008. 173, 177

G. Milne and J. Mitrovica. Searching for eustasy in deglacial sea-level histories. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 27(25-26):2292–2302, 2008. doi: 10.1016/j.quascirev.2008.08.018. 132

S. E. Minson, M. Simons, and J. L. Beck. Bayesian inversion for finite fault earthquake source models I: theory and algorithm. *Geophysical Journal International*, 2013. doi: 10.1093/gji/ggt180. 67, 71

A. C. Mix. The oxygen-isotope record of glaciation. In *North America and Adjacent Oceans During The Last Deglaciation*, chapter 6, pages 111–135. Geological Society of America, 1987. 73

R. D. Muench, A. K. Wahlin, T. M. Özgökmen, R. Hallberg, and L. Padman. Impacts of bottom corrugations on a dense Antarctic outflow: NW Ross Sea. *Geophysical Research Letters*, 36(23):L23607, 2009. 191

R. Muscheler, J. Beer, G. Wagner, C. Laj, C. Kissel, G. M. Raisbeck, F. Yiou, and P. W. Kubik. Changes in the carbon cycle during the last deglaciation as indicated by the comparison of ^{10}Be and ^{14}C records. *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 219(3-4): 325–340, 2004. doi: 10.1016/S0012-821X(03)00722-2. 2

A. T. Nguyen, D. Menemenlis, and R. Kwok. Arctic ice-ocean simulation with optimized model parameters: approach and assessment. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 116: C04025, 2011. 175

K.W. Nicholls, S. Østerhus, K. Makinson, T. Gammelsrod, and E. Fahrbach. Ice-ocean processes over the continental shelf of the southern Weddell Sea. *Reviews of Geophysics*, 47(3):1–23, 2009. 170, 171, 197

U. S. Ninnemann and C. D. Charles. Changes in the mode of Southern Ocean circulation over the last glacial cycle revealed by foraminiferal stable isotopic variability. *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 201, 2002. 4

A. H. Orsi, G. C. Johnson, and J. L. Bullister. Circulation, mixing and production of Antarctic Bottom Water. *Progress in Oceanography*, 43(1):55–109, 1999. 170, 171

D. Paillard and F. Parrenin. The Antarctic ice sheet and the triggering of deglaciations. *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 227(3-4):263–271, 2004. doi: 10.1016/j.epsl.2004.08.023. 199

H. A. Paul, S. M. Bernasconi, D. W. Schmid, and J. A. Mckenzie. Oxygen isotopic composition of the Mediterranean Sea since the Last Glacial Maximum: constraints from pore water analyses. *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 192, 2001. 7, 13

J.R. Petit et al. Climate and atmospheric history of the past 420,000 years from the Vostok ice core, Antarctica. *Nature*, 399(6735):429–436, 1999. 1, 198

J. F. Price and M. O'Neil-Baringer. Outflow and deep water production by marginal seas. *Progress in Oceanography*, 33(3):161–200, 1994. 184

M. E. Raymo. The timing of major climate terminations. *Paleoceanography*, 12(4):577–585, 1997. 18

M. H. Redi. Oceanic isopycnal mixing by coordinate rotation. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 12:1154–1158, 1979. 173

J. Reid and R. J. Lynn. On the influence of the Norwegian-Greenland and Weddell seas upon the bottom waters of the Indian and Pacific oceans. *Deep-Sea Research*, 18: 1063–1088, 1971. 170

E. Rignot, J. L. Bamber, M. R. Van Den Broeke, C. Davis, Y. Li, W. J. Van De Berg, and E. van Meijgaard. Recent Antarctic ice mass loss from radar interferometry and regional climate modelling. *Nature Geoscience*, 1:106–110, 2008. 181

Y. Rosenthal, C. H. Lear, D. W. Oppo, and B. K. Linsley. Temperature and carbonate ion effects on Mg/Ca and Sr/Ca ratios in benthic foraminifera: Aragonitic species Hoeglundina elegans. *Paleoceanography*, 21(1), 2006. doi: 10.1029/2005PA001158. 6

W. F. Ruddiman, M. E. Raymo, D. G. Martinson, B. M. Clement, and J. Backman. Pleistocene evolution: Northern Hemisphere ice sheets and North Atlantic ocean. *Paleoceanography*, 4(4):353–412, 1989. 1

J.-B. Sallée, K. Speer, S. Rintoul, and S. Wijffels. Southern Ocean Thermocline Ventilation. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 40(3):509–529, 2010. doi: 10.1175/2009JPO4291.1. 133

J. L. Sarmiento and J. R. Toggweiler. A new model for the role of the oceans in determining atmospheric pCO_2. *Nature*, 308:621–624, 1984. 2

J. D. Scargle. Studies in Astronomical Time Series Analysis. II. Statistical Aspects of Spectral Analysis of Unevenly Spaced Data. *The Astrophysical Journal*, 263:835–853, 1982. 84

D. P. Schrag and D. J. DePaolo. Determination of $\delta^{18}O$ of Seawater in the Deep Ocean during the Last Glacial Maximum. *Paleoceanography*, 8(1):1, 1993. doi: 10.1029/92PA02796. 7, 13

D.P. Schrag, G. Hampt, and D.W. Murray. Pore Fluid Constraints on the Temperature and Oxygen Isotopic Composition of the Glacial Ocean. *Science*, 272(5270), 1996. 7, 13, 73, 74

D.P. Schrag, J.F. Adkins, K. McIntyre, J.L. Alexander, D.A. Hodell, C.D. Charles, and J.F. McManus. The oxygen isotopic composition of seawater during the Last Glacial Maximum. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 21:331–342, 2002. 7, 169

H. N. Schrum, R. W. Murray, and B. Gribsholt. Comparison of Rhizon Sampling and Whole Round Squeezing for Marine Sediment Porewater. *Scientific Drilling*, 13:47–50, 2012. doi: 10.2204/iodp.sd.13.08.2011. xxii, 149

J. Seeberg-Elverfeldt, M. Schlüter, T. Feseker, and M. Kölling. Rhizon sampling of porewaters near the sediment-water interface of aquatic systems. *Limnology and Oceanography: Methods*, 3:361–371, 2005. 148, 151

N. J. Shackleton. Oxygen isotope analyses and Pleistocene temperatures re-assessed. *Nature*, 215(5096):15–17, 1967. 73

U. Siegenthaler and T. Wenk. Rapid atmospheric CO_2 variations and ocean circulation. *Nature*, 308:624–626, 1984. 3

D. M. Sigman and E. A. Boyle. Glacial/interglacial variations in atmospheric carbon dioxide. *Nature*, 407:859–869, 2000. 2, 3

D. M. Sigman, M. P. Hain, and G. H. Haug. The polar ocean and glacial cycles in atmospheric CO_2 concentration. *Nature*, 466(7302):47–55, 2010. doi: 10.1038/nature09149. 3

L. Skinner and N. Shackleton. An Atlantic lead over Pacific deep-water change across Termination I: implications for the application of the marine isotope stage stratigraphy. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 24(5-6):571–580, March 2005. doi: 10.1016/j.quascirev.2004.11.008. 77

B. M. Sloyan and S. R. Rintoul. Circulation, Renewal, and Modification of Antarctic Mode and Intermediate Water. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 31(4):1005–1030, April 2001. doi: 10.1175/1520-0485(2001)031⟨1005:CRAMOA⟩2.0.CO;2. 133

G. A. Spinelli, E. R. Giambalvo, and A. T. Fisher. Hydrologic properties and distribution of sediments. In EE Davis and H Elderfield, editors, *Hydrogeology of the Oceanic Lithosphere*, chapter 6, pages 151–188. Cambridge University Press, 2004. 14, 17

M. Stein, G. J. Wasserburg, P. Aharon, J. H. Chen, Z. R. Zhu, A. Bloom, and J. Chappell. TIMS U-series dating and stable isotopes of the last interglacial event in Papua New Guinea. *Geochimica et Cosmochimica Acta*, 57:2541–2554, 1993. 142, 146

C. H. Stirling, T. M. Esat, M. T. McCulloch, and K. Lambeck. High-precision U-series dating of corals from Western Australia and implications for the timing and duration of the Last Interglacial. *Earth and Planetary Science Letters*, 135:115–130, 1995. 142, 143, 144, 145

C. H Stirling, T. M Esat, K. Lambeck, and M. T. McCulloch. Timing and duration of the Last Interglacial: evidence for a restricted interval of widespread coral reef growth. *Earth and Planetary Science Letters*, 160:745–762, 1998. doi: 10.1016/S0012-821X(98)00125-3. 141, 142, 143, 144, 145

D.A.V. Stow, F.J. Hernández-Molina, C. Alvarez Zarikian, and the Expedition 339 Scientists. Proceedings of the IODP. 339, 2013. doi: 10.2204/iodp.proc.339.2013. 150

B. J. Szabo, K. R. Ludwig, D. R. Muhs, and K. R. Simmons. Thorium-230 ages of corals and duration of the last interglacial sea-level high stand on Oahu, Hawai'i. *Science*, 266(5182):93–6, 1994. doi: 10.1126/science.266.5182.93. 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146

L. D. Talley. Closure of the global overturning circulation through the Indian, Pacific and Southern Oceans: Schematics and transports. *Oceanography*, 26(1):80–97, 2013. 131

A. Tarantola. *Inverse Problem Theory and Methods for Model Parameter Estimation*. Society for Industrial and Applied Mathematics, 2005. 78

N. Thiagarajan, J. Adkins, and J. Eiler. Carbonate clumped isotope thermometry of deep-sea corals and implications for vital effects. *Geochimica et Cosmochimica Acta*, 75(16):4416–4425, 2011. doi: 10.1016/j.gca.2011.05.004. 7

N. Thiagarajan, D. Gerlach, M. L. Roberts, A. Burke, A. McNichol, W. J. Jenkins, A. V. Subhas, R. E. Thresher, and J. F. Adkins. Movement of deep-sea coral populations on climatic timescales. *Paleoceanography*, 28(2):227–236, June 2013. doi: 10.1002/palo.20023. 7

J. R. Toggweiler and B. Samuels. The effect of sea ice on the salinity of Antarctic bottom waters. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 25:1980–1997, 1995. 171

J. R. Toggweiler, J. L. Russell, and S. R. Carson. Midlatitude westerlies, atmospheric CO_2, and climate change during the ice ages. *Paleoceanography*, 21, 2006. 171

M. A. Toscano, W. R. Peltier, and R. Drummond. ICE-5G and ICE-6G models of postglacial relative sea-level history applied to the Holocene coral reef record of northeastern St Croix, U.S.V.I.: investigating the influence of rotational feedback on GIA processes at tropical latitudes. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 30(21-22):3032–3042, October 2011. doi: 10.1016/j.quascirev.2011.07.018. 132

J. Tournadre, F. Girard-Ardhuin, and B. Legrésy. Antarctic icebergs distributions, 20022010. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 117(C5):2002–2010, May 2012. doi: 10.1029/2011JC007441. 134

S. M. Uppala, P. W. Kållberg, A. J. Simmons, U. Andrae, V. da Costa Bechtold, M. Fiorino, J. K. Gibson, J. Haseler, A. Hernandez, G. A. Kelly, X. Li, K. Onogi,

S. Saarinen, N. Sokka, R.P. Allan, E. Andersson, K. Arpe, M.A. Balmaseda, A.C.M. Beljaars, L. van de Berg, J. Bidlot, N. Bormann, S. Caires, F. Chevallier, A. Dethof, M. Dragosavac, M. Fisher, M. Fuentes, S. Hagemann, E. Hólm, B.J. Hoskins, L. Isaksen, P.A.E.M. Janssen, R. Jenne, A.P. McNally, J.-F. Mahfouf, J.-J. Morcrette, N.A. Rayner, R.W. Saunders, P. Simon, A. Sterl, K.E. Trenberth, A. Untch, D. Vasiljevic, P. Viterbo, and J. Woollen. The ERA-40 re-analysis. *Quarterly Journal of the Royal Meteorological Society*, 131:2961–3012, 2005. 177

M. van den Broeke, W. J. van de Berg, and E. van Meijgaard. Firn depth correction along the Antarctic grounding line. *Antarctic Science*, 20:513–517, 2008. 173

J. H. Wang, C. V. Robinson, and I. S. Edelman. Self-diffusion and Structure of Liquid Water. III. Measurement of the Self-diffusion of Liquid Water with H2, H3 and O18 as Tracers. *Journal of the American Chemical Society*, 75(2):466–470, 1953. doi: 10.1021/ja01098a061. 78

P. L. Whitehouse, M. J. Bentley, and A. M. Le Brocq. A deglacial model for Antarctica: geological constraints and glaciological modelling as a basis for a new model of Antarctic glacial isostatic adjustment. *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 32:1–24, 2012. 171

M. Winton, R. Hallberg, and A. Gnanadesikan. Simulation of density-driven frictional downslope flow in z-coordinate ocean models. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 28: 2163–2174, 1998. 180

C. Wunsch. The spectral description of climate change including the 100 ky energy. *Climate Dynamics*, 20:353–363, 2003. doi: 10.1007/s00382-002-0279-z. 91

C. Wunsch and P. Heimbach. How long to oceanic tracer and proxy equilibrium? *Quaternary Science Reviews*, 27(7-8):637–651, 2008. doi: 10.1016/j.quascirev.2008.01.006. 15, 77

J. Yu and H. Elderfield. Mg/Ca in the benthic foraminifera Cibicidoides wuellerstorfi and Cibicidoides mundulus: Temperature versus carbonate ion saturation. *Earth and Planetary Research Letters*, 276(1-2):129–139, 2008. doi: 10.1016/j.epsl.2008.09.015. 6

J. D. Zika, B. M. Sloyan, and T. J. McDougall. Diagnosing the Southern Ocean Overturning from Tracer Fields. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 39(11):2926–2940, 2009. doi: 10.1175/2009JPO4052.1. 77

J. D. Zika, T. J. McDougall, and B. M. Sloyan. Weak Mixing in the Eastern North Atlantic: An Application of the Tracer-Contour Inverse Method. *Journal of Physical Oceanography*, 40(8):1881–1893, August 2010. doi: 10.1175/2010JPO4360.1. 77

H.J. Zwally, J.C. Comiso, C.L. Parkinson, D.J. Cavalieri, and P. Gloersen. Variability of Antarctic sea ice 1979-1998. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, 107(C5):3041, 2002. 172